CHRYSAL;

OR,

THE ADVENTURES

OF

A GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

CURIOUS AND INTERESTING ANECDOTES

OF THE

MOST NOTED PERSONS IN EVERY RANK OF LIFE.

WHOSE HANDS IT PASSED THROUGH,

IN AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, AND PORTUGAL.

BY AN ADEPT.

To show Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Pressure.

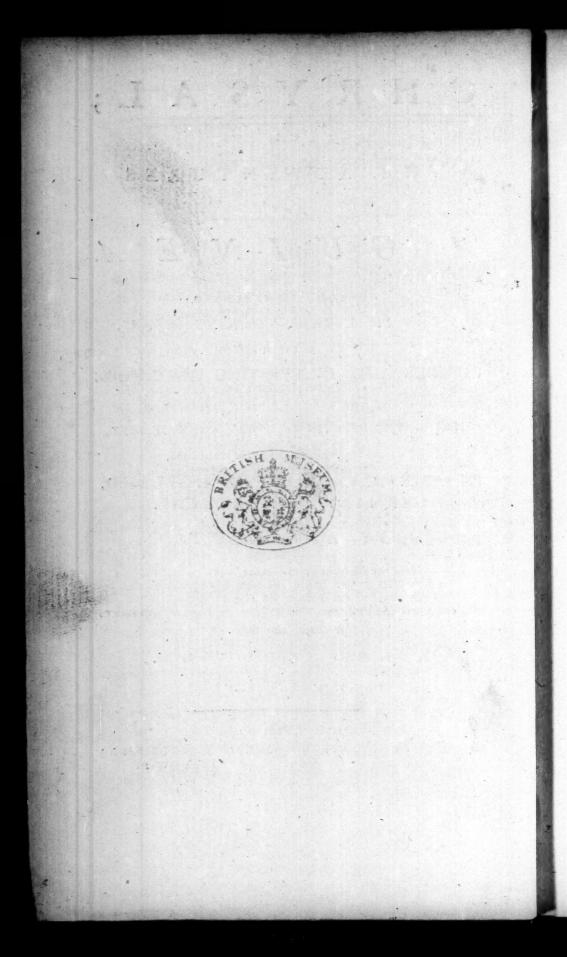
SHAKSPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

A NEW EDITION. VOL. II.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. F. AND C. RIVINGTON; G. ROBINSON;
T. CADELL; T. EVANS; AND R. BALDWIN.
M DCC LXXXIII.



CONTENTS of Vol. II.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

SOME remarks on language. Character of Chrysal's new master. Chrysal attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception. P. 1

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop, dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop is diverted by another dream.

CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the assonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.

CHAP. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace.

CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow Protestants in A 2. GERMANY.

GERMANY. He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character.

CHAP. VI.

The true use of court-favour. The Biter bitten.

An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a sool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering an house to be built instead of a hen-coop; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common. A beau Lord beaten by a Bailist, for walking in the fields in an undress.

CHAP. VII.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stockjobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kindintentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character.

CHAP. VIII.

The colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL changes his service, for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe maker, who was like to be banged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSAL into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those taugh that win.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted balladsinger

finger. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike. 58

CHAP. XI.

A venerable Matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. Momus plays successively upon Doctor Hunch-Back, and Mother Brimstone. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character.

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRY-SAL enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment, in her visit to the Prison. Her Grace's character.

CHAP. XIII.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a route. CHRYSAL changes his service for that of a lady of enterprise. A bold stroke for a husband. 83

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of the industry, who brings him to a horse race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practise part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences.

CHAP. XV.

Chrysal's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation. Chrysal comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly A 3

offer for very odd reasons. His strange notions of some affairs.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's fentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. CHRYSAL enters into the service of the general. Constitute between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.

CHAP. XVII.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old fashioned romantick style. CHRYSAL quits the service of the general, and, after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. Political conversation between a DUTCHMAN and a JEW. They differ in opinion. AMINADAB leaves his friend VAN HOGAN in great distress.

CHAP. XIX.

AMINADAB bids adieu to her Grace, and fails with his son for Africa. Chrysal remains with a Dutch banker. The principles and conscience of a good Dutchman. Chrysal is sent into Germany. His opinion of the Dutch.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National

National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected of such passions. 129

CHAP. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAL is carried to his destined master. 136

CHAP. XXII.

How Chrysal found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolution to maintain the consequence of his rank. 143

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. Chrysal is sent to market, where he is given to a few for bacon.

CHAP. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in steft. The celebration of the PASSOVER in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed.
This cleared up without a miracle. The few
furvivors of the first fury brought to publick
justice.

159

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy English soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign to a publick tryal. His hopes are again disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL arrives at BRUSSELS. The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.

CHAP. XIV.

The confessor entertains Chrysal's master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.

CHAP. XV.

Continued. His lordship's scheme to sling his rival unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occasions strange discoveries. Woman never at a loss. Law often spoils sport.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a GREAT man.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to ENGLAND, where his fervices are rejected by the state, and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the considence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with a halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHAP. XIX.

Chrysal comes, at Lisbon, into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. Chrysal's master is at length taken up, and he changes his service.

CHAP. XX.

Chrysal meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest Aminadab. Adventures of his son. He enters into business at Lisbon, in which Chrysal suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. Chrysal enters into a new service.

CHAP

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. The history of Pheron and Ilissa. 277

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, and obtains his consent. He employs an English sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.

CHAP. XXIII.

The failor goes to London, buys a ship, and returns to Lisbon, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a French ship. He lands his passengers at Alexandria, returns home, and marries. Chrysal quits his service.

C H A P. XXIV.

CHRYSAL arrives in LONDON, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.

11 1

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINE A.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL's new master. CHRYSAL attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception.

HAVE often been apprehensive that the manner in which I express myself may lead you into some mistakes of my meaning, the signification of words, in the language of men, being so unsettled, that it is scarce possible to convey a determinate sense, without such a periphrasis as would take up too much time in so complicated scenes as those I describe; for where different, or perhaps contrary, meanings are signified by the same word, how easy is it for a mind prone to error to take the wrong one!

For

Vol. II. B

For instance, the character of a good man may be thought to be as safe from misapprehension, from the immutability of the virtues which constitute it, as any that can be attributed either by, or to human frailty: and yet how variously, how

contradictorily, is it applied!

On the Royal-Exchange, he is a good man who is worth ten thousand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injustice he has amassed that sum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, goodness affumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and supports his honour with his sword, though he is guilty of the basest breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in professed violation of all laws human and divine: while, in the strictness of truth, and propriety of expression, no greater abuse of words can be conceived, than that of prostituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modifh way of speaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only instance: they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's conversation. The horse that wins the match, goes damn'd fast; as the one that loses, goes damn'd slow. The weather in summer is hell-fire hot,

in winter hell-fire cold.

Now, what sense can the very Devil himself, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of such contradictions? Though, indeed, these particular phrases give him pleasure, as they show the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of it samiliar to their minds in their common conversation.

But

But I am not at leifure to prescribe rules for avoiding this confusion, one of the most extensive causes of human error. I shall only give you some cautions to prevent your falling into it, in respect

to what I fay to you.

You are to observe, then, that whenever I speak in the person of another, I always would be understood in the sense which that person would be understood in at that time, without any further regard to moral, or physical truth, or propriety of speech. But, when I speak my own sentiments (which indeed I very rarely do) I shall always deliver them with perspicuity and precision, as far as the jargon I am obliged to use will allow, and would have my words taken in the fense usually given to them, in the particular subject I may be then speaking of; as the barrenness of language has not been able to afford distinct terms to them all, but is forced to wrest known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injustice of the general complaint against the verbosity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) distinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverse.

My new master was a person of some learning, and what was of more use, of thorough knowledge of the world; but wanting friends and interest to advance him to those dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had sollicited this place, in discharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry consideration of a poor salary (for, as he was not in the secret, he had no share of the spoils) though his circumstances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuse it, but to place his abilities in a more conspicuous light, where they might take the

notice of his superiors.

As foon as he had received his stipend, he went home, where he found his wife dreffed in all her best clothes, and expecting him with the utmost impatience! 'My dear (faid she) how could you ' stay abroad so late? I have been waiting for you 4 above these two hours, and was just going without feeing you.'- So late, my dear! it is scarcely fix o'clock! But where are you going in such baste?'- To the Bishop's! the Rector of -' died of an apoplectick fit as he was taking his and you know, my intimacy with the Bishop's lady intitles me ' to ask any thing from her.' - But, child, this is onot in her power to give, and, even if it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance to expect!'-'This diffidence has been your ruin! You are always afraid of asking, as if there was ruin in being refused; but that is not my case! Ask and you shall have, is my text! Now-a days, 4 nothing is got without it.'- 'Yes, child, but too frequent or improper asking brings contempt.'-• The manner—the manner of asking is the thing! And you cannot think I want to be s taught that now, after having lived fo long among the Great! Often have I known a request properly made gain a man a place, for which he was never dreamed of! As to the · greatness of this living, never mind that! the greater it is, the greater will be your obli-· gation to the person who gets it for you! What ' money have you got about you? We shall make 6 a party perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound note! I may have occasion for that tco, to make a bett.' · There, my dear, is the money I received to-day!

I'll step up for the note: but, pray, nly dearest,

take

take care what you do! It is our all! And be fure vou are not tempted to any thing like simony! It is a great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever ' rifing, if it is detected.'- 'And the fool that is detected deserves never to rise! You may call a thing by what nonfenfical name you pleafe; but, if knowledge of the world were to prevent e people's rifing in it, I do not know who would be uppermost now-a-days! Bring me the note, and leave the rest to me. You shall know no-' thing of what I intend till it is done, and then the fault, if any, will be all mine !- Here, Jane, fettle the furbellows of my fcarf, and, John, ' call a chair to the door directly.'- Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all to you! I do not desire to know what you intend: but remember, 'my dear, this note is our all!'- 'Never fear! The chair is come, and I must lose no time! You will divert yourself with your children, or books, I suppose; or go to the coffee-house. Perhaps I may not return till it is late.'— I " wish you success, my dear, and pray be cautious." With these words the Doctor retired, but to

With these words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amusements his wise mentioned I cannot say, for he had given me to her, who

carried me away to the Bishop's.

When she came there, the sootman answered, that it was not his lady's night, and she was not at home: but my mistress had lived too long among the Great, to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him she had some earnest business, and must see her. The doors instantly slew open, his lady was at home, and my mistress shown up without any further difficulty.

B 3

The

The Bishop's Lady was sitting at a snug party, with three or four select friends, and seemed not much pleased at the intrusion of my mistress, to whom she scarce deigned a nod, but turning tothe footman, 'I thought, firrah (faid she) that I was not to be at home this evening! I suppose I shall have all the mob of the town let in upon " me.'—" Dear madam (replied my mistres) the man is not to blame! He told me you were not at home; but, having some very earnest businefs, I made bold to break through your orders; but I hope for your pardon when you know the cause of my intrusion.'- O madam (re turned the Lady) you know I am always glad of your company. I only chide the fellow for onot obeying my orders. Pray, be feated, 'madam; as foon as the rubber is up I shall wait upon you.'——'Dear madam (added my mistress) you need not give yourself that trouble; now I am with you my business can ' wait your leisure.'

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finished, my miftress was asked to cut in, one of the party being taken suddenly ill, which she did, and sat out the whole evening, her success at cards keeping up her spirits, and giving her hopes of the like like in the greater affair she came about; but her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber; and, what was still worse, several by-bets, which she made to bring herself home.

This put her into fuch a temper, that the moment the rest of the company was gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out- And now pray, madam, may I ask you what was the great business that brought you here this evening? (faid ' she.) Unlucky business it has been for me, I know; for I have never held a card fince you came: but I shall take care that rascal who let you in shall never serve me so again! He ' shall strip and turn off, without his breakfast, the ' moment I am up in the morning.'- ' Dear madam (replied my mistress, unabashed at such a falute) have patience a moment, and I hope to make you amends for all! Will you please to sit down to one fober party of piquet? You are always too hard for me, yet I'll venture all my winnings, and perhaps what I have to fay in the mean time may compensate for my intrufion.

The lady could not imagine what she meant, but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and, though it was near ten o'clock, she sat down to cards with as much keenness, as if six hours drudging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As foon as a repique or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her, 'Dear madam, that is right! Have you heard of the sad accident that happened this evening?'—'Not I, (replied the other) pray what was it?'—'Why poor Dr. ——, was taken shortly after dinner, and died in his chair!'—'Aye, then, I suppose he B 4

bad plum-porridge, and over-eat himself! and so burst a pudding, as we say to children. Ha, ha, ' ha!'-- 'Ha, ha, ha!-But, pray, madam, have you any faith in dreams? What do you think? I dreamed last night that I saw you at court, on some great occasion, with just such a diamond necklace on as the Countefs's, which vou had bought with five hundred pounds that ' you won from me on a bet; you laying that ' my husband would, and I that he would not, get the Doctor's living! Well, to be fure, there " must be something more than ordinary in it; for, can you believe it? this very morning I put a bank-note for five hundred pounds in my pocket, here it is; though I did not think of the poor man's death till I heard it as I came by this evening, when the dream ran fo strongly in my head, that I could not forbear breaking in upon vou, a rudeness I never should have been guilty of on any other occasion.'- Dear madam, you · need make no apology to me! You know your company is always welcome, I am always at home to you!'-· But, madam, what do you think of my dream? I don't know. I only wish it were to prove true! · For five hundred pounds could never come more sea-' fonably.'- 'Then you must win it; for my heart is fet upon making the bet; and I affure you, I have fuch a regard for you, that I do not even wish you to lose! and that is what few gamesters can fay.'- You are a pleasant creature! but as for the BET, it shall be upon condition that my · Lord is not under any engagement to the Minister, or her Grace who got him his bishopric. If he is disengaged, I will lay you, and you shall lose, my e girl, if it was ten times as much, and there's encouragement for you to hold. The bell rings! Will

' you walk down and take a bit of supper? There is onobody but my Lord and I; but do not take the least

onotice of any thing about the matter, nor even feem

to have heard of the Doctor's death, should my Lord e mention it; but muster all your spirits, and be as

entertaining as you can, for I always work him up

best when he goes to bed in a good humour.'

The piquet match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the bishop's lady, whose winnings and expectations fent her to supper in high spirits, where she found his Lordship already seated in a

very thoughtful mood. After the usual complimentary expletives that usher in every polite conversation, 'Pray, my Lord (fays my new mistress to her husband) ' what will you eat? Shall I help you to a bit of this fricassee? I believe it is very good.'- 'No, ' my dear, I thank you (replied his Lordship) I have not the least appetite! What is it pray?'-Sweet-breads and cock's-combs (returned his ' lady) you used to like them, and they are very ' nice! Or will you help yourself to a bit of that ' fowl before you? Something you must eat.'— No, my dear, I am obliged to your care; but I do not choose any thing to-night: I am not very well! We ' all eat too much! Repletion kills half the people of England! We eat too much!'-You are going to be hipped, my dear! John, give your master a glass of Madeira! Fill the glass! Eating never hurted any one, who washed down his victuals with a glass of good wine; horse-meals, indeed, are enough to choke human creatures. So! do onot you find yourself better now? Taste this fricaffee; you cannot think how good it is!'-Well, you will have your way, you make me do as s you please, though never so contrary to my inclina-6 tions!

tions! Do you call this a fricassee? I thought fricassees had spice put in them! This is as insipid as chopped hay! Lord deliver us from such cooks! The badness of servants, in general, seems to be a judgement on the vices of the age?"—" Well, my dear, taste that fowl, it looks like a good one, and the cook could not spoil that. Pray, madam, shall I trouble you to help his lordship to a leg and a wing, and a bit of the breaft.'- You give me too " much! I shall never be able to eat all this! beside, you know, my dear, I choose a bit of the rump.'-· Eat that first, my dear, and then you shall have the rump: but what has happened to make you ' fo low-spirited this evening?'-' O child, who · can be other than low spirited, when such instances of mortality happen before our eyes every hour? Who can tell but the misfortune may be his own next moment? There's Doctor -, poor man! was taken off this evening, without a minute's warning to prepare for such a tremendous change, just after be had made an hearty dinner! Here, John, take away my plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever fleep after dinner again!'- 'And, John, give your master another bumper of Madeira; that was what the Doctor wanted, he eat a great deal, and did not allow himselfany drink. Drink good wine, and never fear that eating will hurt you.'- Ah! but that was not the case of his · Grace of -----, who lies this moment in the agonies of death! his physicians left him two hours ago! The lord prepare us all, and give us notice of · his coming! He did not stint himself of wine; he took his bottle chearfully, good man!'- 'Chearfully, did you fay? I should have said sottishly; for he has done nothing but drink for these many years past! He has run into the opposite extreme from

1.80

from the Doctor, drinking too much, and not eating enough to support nature. And I hope you do not say he is gone without warning at fourscore? He has had time enough to prepare: but, why should these examples affect you particularly? You do not eat like the Doctor, nor drink like his Grace, and are young enough to be son to the youngest of them; why then should you fear their sate? Here, John, give me a pint glass half sull of Madeira, and reach me

three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear, if you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a

bit of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with you.

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper, without being able to join in the conversation; but as soon as his Lordship's taking the jellies made a pause in his lady's tenderness, she called for a glass of wine, and, bowing to the Bishop, drank to him by the title of bis Grace very gravely.

His Lordship started, and his Lady stared, while she finished her glass without any emotion, and feemed quite unconscious of having faid any thing unufual or improper. This behaviour still embarrassed them more; when the Lady, unable to contain her surprise, ' Dear madam (said she) what have you faid? Or how came you to address my Lord by that title?'- 'Ihope, madam, (replied the other) I have not faid any thing im-• proper! You really frighten me! I hope I have onot been failing in my respect, or addressed his Lordship by any improper title?'— I cannot ' fay an improper one, indeed! but one that does onot belong to him, at least as yet,' (returned the Lady.)- Dear madam, what do you mean ? Pray, do not distress me! but you must divert B 6 ' yourself

'yourself surely! It is not possible that I could fail in any respect to his Grace!'—'Ha, ha, ha!

'There it is again! Fail in your respect! No.
'You only raised your respect too high! You

called him his Grace, that's all.'— And is

'that all? Thank heaven that I did! and long

' live his Grace, I say again,' (said she dropping on her knees, and eagerly kissing his hand) ' long

' live your Grace! There is, there must be truth in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the Bishop, who had hitherto continued to fup up his jelly without feeming to take any notice of what they were faying, could not forbear showing some emotion; for he had the strongest faith in them, and always fanguinely defended their credit, especially since his present elevation had confirmed those of his grandmother: 'What dreams? pray, good madam,' (faid he, addressing my late mistress with a visible anxiety) 'What dreams do you mean? Those which were thought to have respect to me are understood ' to be already accomplished.'- 'Please your Grace, the impulse of the spirit is upon me, and I canonot call you by any other title! Please your Grace, I fay, I dreamed last night, as I told your Lady but just now, that I met her at court, on fome very great occasion, as fine as hands could ' make her (I told her this just now, before I ' knew one fyllable of his Grace's death) and that · fhe came up to me fmiling, and thanked me for the cause of her coming there, for it was I who had made you a great man!—Now, what could this possibly mean, but what has happened here this moment, when, by giving you this title first ' (and, Lord knows, I did it without the least de-' fign, or even being fensible of it when I did it)

I may in some manner be said to have made you

the great man it belonged to: let the world fay

what they will, I do believe there is truth in dreams, and I think mine is out now.

She had run on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the Bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined; but that was far from being the case: he heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it, after she had stopped, before he had power to speak a word.

As for his Lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the doctor's living, and as such resolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addressing herself to the other, 'Indeed, 'madam (said she) I do not know what to say to this affair! When you told me your dream just

onw, I made nothing of it, but this account of his Grace's death almost staggers me! Well, if this

fucceeds, and who knows what may happen, I fhall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams!

CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the assonishment, and almost conversion, of the Bishop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.

By this time his Lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer, Pray, madam (said he) what time had you this vision

vision or dream? In the night, or towards the ' morning?'- In the morning, my Lord (replied · she) at the conclusion of my second sleep: and, indeed, it made such an impression upon my mind, that I could not go to fleep after: for it was not in the confusion of common dreams! I saw every thing distinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very place; and particularly your Lady appeared as e plainly to me as she sits there, Lord bless us! and by the same token, she was dressed in white damask, spick and span new, and had the most beautiful diamond necklace on that ever my eyes beheld; and

charmingly she looked I thought.' ' I really do not know what to fay to this matter (replied his Lordship with great deliberation) the visions of the morning have ever been held ' in most repute; for then the mind has recovered from the fatigues of the preceding day, and is able to exert its abilities, and look forward into the time to come. There are fome good circumstances I own in this dream! I am glad that ' my wife was not drefled in colours; that would have been an ill omen; but white is the peculiar ' garment of success, angels are clad in white! and in this case particularly, it may prefigure the episcopal lawn, as that is an emblematical ' type of the purity of the episcopal function; and the episcopal and archiepiscopal differ only in dee gree. As for the necklace, there may be more in that also than is apprehended. Precious stones are ' the insignia of dignity, and in the Fewish priest-· hood, particularly, were symbolical of the highest order; for none of the priefts wore them but the · fupreme or high priest, whose dignity answered e nearly to that of Primate with us; and if such further bleffings should be the divine will, it · were

were impious and ungrateful to refuse its favours.

Perhaps I speak unintelligibly to you; but the

opinions of the learned must be delivered in their 'phrase.'- 'Pray, my Lord, proceed; I could hear

your Lordship for ever; I am always the wifer and

the better for hearing your Lordship.'

Then, as to the credit to be given to dreams, (refumed his Lordship) though the scepticism of these unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of wifer antiquity was of another opinion, of which numberless instances might be given out of the holy fcriptures. And among the Gentiles, the greatest of their poets fays, Ovae en dios esi, that is, in English, Dreams proceed from Jove, that is, from the supreme Deity, whom they erroneously called by that name. And though the heathens were guilty of great superstitions in this particular of dreams, it was not in the credit they gave them, but in the methods which they used to procure them; fuch as offering facrifices, and fleeping in the skins of the victims, and many others; whereas the dream that comes from heaven, comes unfought and unexpected, and should be received with reverence! And if this is fuch, and I own it has much of the appearance, Thy will be done, O Lord! Thy fervant submits as it is his duty.'

Greatly as they must have been edified by this elaborate differtation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, especially his wife, who knew not which to admire most, the readiness of the thought, or the ease with which it was received. But the dreamer had a further scheme in her head, to carry on which she now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Bishop, 'My Lord (said she) may I beg your

Lordship's bleffing! I hope, and I am confident in that hope, that mine was not a common dream, from the impression it made on my mind, which could not have been stronger, if I had actually been present at your Lady's kissing the King's hand on your promotion; but, if my zeal has hurried me too far in my expressions of it, I rely on your goodness to forgive my fault, which was rather an enthusiasm than a design; and so, my

Lord, I beg leave to wish you a good night.' With these words she withdrew; and her patroness wondering she had not thrown her a wink, and defirous to have a laugh with her at her hufband's credulity, went as to see her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That ' was an excellent thought (faid she) and will ' make our affair quite easy, if he is not engaged.' - I do not understand you, madam (replied the other) pray what thought do you mean?'- Why, child, that of the dream; what else should I ' mean ?'- ' A thought, dear madam! Why do not 'you think I was serious, and the dream real?'-Not one word of either, I affure you; and I wonder at your asking me that question here, where ' no one is present to observe us.'- ' Dear madam, vou have quite mistaken me, I assure you. It is true, I can jest sometimes; but in this, give me · leave to fay, that I was most serious; and what is " more, that I am fure the event will confirm it."-'You aftonish me, madam; I declare, I looked upon the whole as a mere finesse to promote our fcheme about the Doctor's living for your hufband!'- I am forry, madam, that you should have fuch an opinion of me, as that I could invent such a fory on any account.'- Well (as I said before, though in another sense) I know not what to · make

'make of the whole! But as you are so positive, and my Lord seems inclined to believe you, perhaps there may be more in it than I can see; and therefore I shall suspend my opinion till I see the end of it. This though I promise, that my affistance shall not be wanting to either part of the dream.'—' And I promise you that I will make good all I said, particularly about the wager and the necklace; and so, madam, I wish you a good night. I shall do myself the pleasure to call and see how you

are in the morning.

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the Bishop's Lady into a meditation as profound as his Lordship's. 'Can this be possible! ' (faid she to herfelf) and yet how could she have the face to stand it out so, if it was not true? But then it was but a dream! Aye, but my hufband fays dreams are not to be flighted; and he ' should know more than I, at least of those things that are to be found in books. And what if it fhould be so after all? and that I should take place of Mrs. —, and Mrs. —, and Mrs. —, and all the rest of the Bishop's Ladies!-'That would be charming! and I believe in my foul I shall; for I have always looked upon them with a contempt that showed I should be one day ' their superior. Well, Happy come lucky, says the proverb; my endeavours shall not be wanting, as I promised Mrs. —, whose five hundred pounds will be a pretty earnest of the archbishoprick.'

Having thus argued herself into a kind of belief of the dream, she went in to his Lordship, whom she found absorbed in thought about the vision:
Well, my dear, said she (sitting down by him)

what is your opinion of this strange matter? I

own it is above my comprehension! At first, I ' imagined the might have been only in jest, and have invented the whole flory merely to divert 'your lowness of spirits; but when I went out with her into the next parlour, and put it home to her, she still persisted in it, and confirmed the truth of what she said by such affeverations, that

· I could not avoid believing her.' But, my dear (replied his Lordship) she said · she told you her dream before she came in here, or ' had heard a word of his Grace's illness!'--- She " most certainly did, my Lord; and with other circumstances, that make the whole still more ' furprifing! Pray, what time did the Doctor die, ' my dear?' -- ' About half an hour after four.'-'That is most wonderful! And pray, my dear, who is to have his living? or are you under any engagement about it?' -- No, child, I am not; onor have I yet determined whom to give it to. But why do you ask these questions? What are they to the purpose of the dream?'- I shall tell you, my Lord. You must know then that she came here · about four o'clock, just as I had got up from dinener, all in the greatest hurry; and with a kind of wildness, I do not know how, in her looks, told me her dream; but with some circumstances that I know her bashfulness would not permit her to mention before you; and these were, that I had bought the diamond necklace, she thought I had on at court, with five hundred pounds which I had won from her, on a wager that you would give her husband the Doctor's living. Now, as he was not even fick at the time of her telling me this, there could be no design in it; and this is what makes me take the more notice of the matter.

But are you sure, child, that she told you this so early as four o'clock? Rather before it, my dear; and what makes me so positive about it is, that a little after she had finished her story, she happened to look at her watch, but it was down, and fo she asked me what o'clock it was by mine, that she might set by it; and I remember it wanted exactly fix minutes of four.'- 'Pray, let me look at your watch; have you not altered it ' fince?'-' No, my dear! but why do you ask?'-Because it is nine minutes faster than mine, and it was just half an hour past four by his watch, as they told me, when he died, and his and mine were exactly ' together; so that the six minutes which your watch wanted of four, and the nine minutes it is faster than ' mine, make a quarter before four, which was three quarters before he died. This is most wonderful! for there could be no design or art in it. This is most wonderful! But there have been many revelations " made in dreams, even in our own times; as for infance, that in DRELINCOURT; for it could be ono other than a dream; and that other of the great Duke of BUCKINGHAM's rife, and afterwards of his death, as it is most judiciously and faithfully represented by the Reverend Historian*, not to mention many more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear, I make you a compliment of it; you may give it to whom you please: though the curate is a very learned and good man, and has a large family; befide that he has been recommended to me by the whole pariff, whom his long residence among them, for he has been there above thirty years, has made love and respect ' him as a father.' - 'Then let them provide for him, like dutiful children. What affurance! to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the • proper

for proper judge of fuch matters! If it was for no ther reason I would not give it to him, to teach them their duty and distance another time.

· There may be something in that: I do not like fuch interfering in my conduct neither; and therefore you may give it to whom you please. And her husband is a man of learning and good character too, who will not discredit any preferment; but take care that you do not any thing improper. As to your wager, there is no harm in that; but even fo, it · should be kept a secret; I must know nothing of the 'matter.'- I thank you, my dear Lord; I shall be fure to observe your directions; and the accomplishment of this part of the dream I take as an happy prefage of the rest; but you must not be wanting to yourfelf; you had better, I think, go to her Grace, and fee what may offer to promote our hopes.'- That is not a bad thought, my dear; but it grows late; in the morning we shall see what is to be done.' Saying this, they withdrew, whither we must not follow them; for of the genial bed ' with most mysterious reverence I deem.'

C H A P. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. Chrysal enters into the service of her Grace.

Have observed your surprise and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment, invent such fuch a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the Bishop's easy credulity, but even upon his wise also, who was, in a manner, in the secret of her design, but could not interrupt my story to satisfy it sooner, by giving you her

history.

She was a distant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependent. This occasioned her being taken into his family; where she lived several years as an humble companion to his Lady. As she was hand-some, his Lordship had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfashionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the strongest hatred, for fear she should inform his lady, to whom she was not more agreeable, and upon the same account; as her observing temper had given her an opportunity of seeing much more than her Ladyship desired to have her tell.

This made her fituation very unhappy in the family; and inclined her to hearken to the addresses of the Chaplain, to whom his Lordship gave a fmall vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundered pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to speak. As for herself, you have feen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the state which she was bred in improved, or rather sharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enables her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Bishop and his Lady. This affair had made fuch an impression on their minds, that they could dream of nothing else all night but pomp and precedence, which effectually fecured the grant in favour of my late mistress from all danger of revocation.

They

They were scarce seated to breakfast, when word was brought them that she was below; upon which she was immediately invited up, her company being too agreable to admit of any distance or reserve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all fides, his Lordship, with a look of great benevolence, asked her for her husband, and if he was at home; to which she answered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his lordship, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be difagreable I hope (replied his Lordship) and if he is at leifure.'- At leifure, my Lord! (replied she in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the Lady had explained the matter to her.) 'He is, he must be at leisure! No business can interfere with his duty! I'll step for him this moment.'-· You need not give yourfelf that trouble, madam (returned his Lordship.) John, do you go and tell Mr. — that I should be glad to speak with him. For, madam, I think I cannot do less than reward his learning, piety, and good life, with the living of the poor Doctor. It is what I have · long refolved, though I never mentioned it before, because I would not torture him with expectations; and I give it to him now, thus early and unasked, to spare his modesty, and to save myself from the follicitations of others.'- Long live, God bless your Grace; (faid she, throwing herfelf at his feet, and embracing his knees in extacy) for fo I fee it will be, every thing will come out ' just according to my dream! I could not forbear fending to the late Archbishop's, just before I came here, and the porter (for I would not fend a fervant, for fear my known attachment to your · Lordship should make it taken notice of) brought

Grace's

me word, that he was at peace.'—This completed the Bishop's faith, and prevented his sending to enquire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.

quire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.
I must wish you joy, madam (said the Bisshop's Lady) of this advance in your fortune!
Though I am almost angry that my Lord did not let me into the secret. I have lost some hours happiness by his reserve; for I always make the happiness of my friends my own.'—
Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees I thank, I pray for you both! And give me leave, madam, to wish YOU joy of his Lordship's promotion, and of your just advance in rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging to it!'— The necksace, I

fuppose you mean? Ha, ha, ha!'--- I do, indeed, dear madam, and of every other happiness

that can attend so elevated a station.'

Her husband nowentered, in the utmost agitation of spirits between hope and fear; for he was not a stranger to his wife's scheme; (indeed he had suggested the first hint of the bet himself, but with an address that made her think it was her own, he spoke so distantly; for he always preserved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be present at the mysterious ceremony of the Bishop's signing the collation, which he did directly, to avoid giving offense, by refusing other applications, they withdrew, when my mistress was paid her bett, with as great pleasure, by the loser, as she felt in receiving it.

The dream being thus far happily accomplished, the fuccessful dreamer and her husband went home in the highest joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependence, and the fears of want; while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her Grace's levee, and fee whether any thing should

offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called to his Lady to receive her advice, and, recollecting that he had forgot his purse, desired to borrow her's, in which I was, and thus I changed my service once more.

When his Lordship entered her Grace's levee, and had paid his most humble respects, he found the conversation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his diocese, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumstances so moving in the account of this missortune, as to raise the compassion of the whole company, and particularly of her Grace, who said, that she would most willingly contribute to the relief of their distress, but that unluckily she had not less than a bank note for twenty pounds about her.

All the company, who knew the world, underflood her Grace, and dropped the subject; but my new master, who had his knowledge of mankind mostly from books, was so far from taking the hint, that he thought he showed his respect to his patroness, by offering to change her note, or lend

her whatever money she wanted.

Hee Grace was surprised, as the company were confounded, at the ignorant insolence of such an offer. However, as this was not an occasion for showing her resentment, she coldly told him, she would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the person who had mentioned the affair, and carelessy threw the rest, among which I was, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purse, as it was full of money.

My late mafter, pleased with the thought of having been instrumental in so meritorious a bene-

volence

volence, displayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himself; (for respect to her Grace would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty) as did the rest of the company, who all laughed in their sleeves, to think how my master had ruined himself with her Grace by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to obferve their looks, and he was fo far from being fensible that he had done amis, that when her Grace was going to retire, he boldly stepped up to her, and begged leave to speak a word or two with her in private.

Though the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offense, yet she could not decently resuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow Protestants in GERMANY. He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character.

THE great honour of this private audience, at first, put him into some confusion, but, recollecting the consequence at stake, he, after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her, that, sensible of her Grace's great humanity and commisseration for the sufferings of the distressed, of which she had just given so noble an in-Vol. II.

'flance' - 'Pray, my lord, no compliments,' (faid her Grace, interrupting him with a look and accent not very encouraging) ' I am not at present at leifure for them, and if you have no other business'- May it please your Grace, (replied the Bishop) Your virtues are above compli-' ment! and I come to give you an opportunity of exerting them, not folely to praise them.'-' I do not understand you, my Lord! and I am in " Some haste!" ____ I most humbly beg your Grace's pardon, I shall not delay you long! 'To come then briefly to the purpose, I must inform your Grace, that out of the income which it hath pleased the Divine Providence, through your Grace's means to give me, I have thought it my duty to lay by fome little matter, to make a return with, to the Divine beneficence, in charity to his diffressed creatures. Now, as your Grace's kind interest was the means through which this ability was conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble you with the distribution of my mite. -- " Me, my Lord? You aftonish me! I cannot comprehend you!' -- I beg your Grace's indul-gence for a moment. You will forgive this boldness, when you know the motive!-hem! hem!

The sufferings of my Protestant brethren in Germany (I say brethren, for men should know no distinction, but religion) their sufferings, I say, in this calamitous time of war and rapine, when the ambition of princes works the ruin of their people, has made such an impression upon my heart, that I come to offer this small matter to your Grace, to be applied to their relief, as your better knowledge shall see most proper:

proper; a trouble which I should not have prefumed to give your Grace, did not I know that fuch works of charity are a pleasure to vou; and that the better information, which in your high rank you must necessarily have, will enable you to apply it more effectually to their relief than I, in the darkness and ignorance of my humble station, possibly can. I am almost ashamed of the smallness of the sum (it is but two thousand pounds) but it is all that I have yet been able to fave; though I hope to give a better account of my fleward-' ship another time; and that I shall be found not to have buried my talent, especially if it should ' please the Divine Providence to raise me to a higher station, and thereby put the means more · liberally into my power.

'I most humbly beg your Grace's forgiveness of this intrusion of your time. I am your Grace's most humble servant.'——'Stay, my Lord (returned her Grace, with a look and accent softened into the most engaging assability.) Pray, do not go: I see you so seldom, except in the croud, that I cannot part with you so soon. I thank you for the considence you place in me; and shall apply your charity to the best of my judgement. Poor people! they greatly want resides, and if the invincible fortitude of the Bulgarian monarch does not extricate them soon, they will be entirely ruined. But every thing

'is to be hoped for from such a hero!
'You are very good to consider the distresses
'of the poor people! there are few now who
think of any thing but themselves; so their ap-

petites are satisfied, they have no feeling for what others suffer. But, my Lord, is there

• any thing that I can ferve you in? You may depend upon my interest at all times.'——• I am much beholden to your Grace' (replied his Lordship, elevated at such an offer, and now secure as he thought of his hopes;) • I am much beholden to your Grace! I have had too much experience of your Grace's goodness to doubt it. Nothing that I know of at present: if any thing should happen, I shall be most grateful to your Grace for your kind remembrance.

We are all defirous of having our power to do

" good enlarged.'-Yes, my Lord; all good men, like your Lordhip, are. It is a duty to defire fo. But, have you heard any thing of the Archbishop of -' lately?'- 'Not very lately, please your Grace.' - I believe that old man will never die! He was taken with a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would expire every moment, but he has got over it, and is abroad to-day as well as he has been for " many years.' -- "In-d-e-e-d!'- "What is the · matter, my Lord? Something feems to ail you.'-· A-a-fud-den-f-aint-ness has---come -o-o-ver-me; I -mu-st -beg-y-our-Grace—'s — p-ardon—. I — am y — our— Grace—'s—m—oft—h—h—-umb--ble fervant: with which words he made a bad thift to crawl out, muttering to himself-' O my money! my money. O this curfed dream! my money! my money!'-

Her Grace looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then bursting into a loud laughter, 'And is it so, my good Lord? does the wind sit that way? Then I can account for your charity. Hall hall hall

account for your charity: Ha! ha! ha!

But you are disappointed this time, and, I

fear, will be the next too, if you do not bid better. Two thousand for five hundred a year!

Is that your conscience? But it will never

6 do.'--

I was now at the fummit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiofity tempting me to take a view of my new mistress's heart, as she sat her toilet, I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being here my most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold which my mistress had accumulated having taken entire possession of her soul.

CHAP VI.

The true use of court-favour. The Biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering an house to be built instead of a hen-coop; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common. A Beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress.

WHILE my late master retired, to meditate on the exposition of dreams, and to please himself with the virtuous reslexion of so singular an act of charity, her Grace sat down to her

her toilet, where I faw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied

by nature.

When this ferious work was fo far completed that the could attend to other business, one of her most favoured domesticks told her, that she had that very morning received an offer from a man who kept a noted beer-house, and shuffle-board, for the place of a tapster to the Lord-Mayor, which she was sure her Grace's interest would readily obtain. 'Tapster! (answered her Grace) ' what is the value of that place? Reach me the bift of employments, with their falaries and ' perquifites, out of that drawer. Let me fee! 'Tapster to the Lord-Mayor! aye, here it is! Well, and pray what does he offer for it?'-· A thousand guineas, please your Grace (replied her woman) which I really think enough for ' it, confidering every thing'-' Do you, indeed! But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here, as worth five hundred pounds a year; and is that worth no more than a thousand guineas! Does the fellow value his own life only at two years · purchase? --- · Five hundred pounds a year! · How can that be? The falary is no more than fixty; there must be some mistake in your return.'- The falary, the falary fignifies nothing; it is the perquifites! The perquifites are the thing! Do you think any place is va-· lued by the falary? The perquifites of this · place are very confiderable! Let me fee! Why, he buys in all the beer and gin himself, for which he can charge what price he pleases; and then his own account is taken for the quantity that is drunk. Aye indeed: there must be

a mistake in my return to be sure; but not of

the kind you mean. The place is rated too low; for, with such opportunities, it must be worth twice the fum; and I shall enquire into that matter before I dispose of the place. A thousand guineas for such a place! I wonder 'at the fellow's conscience to make such an offer!'- All this is very true; but then there are fome circumstances that must be considered on the other hand too. You know the Lord-'Mayor's year is almost ended; and then, who knows whether his fuccessor will continue all the fervants or not? This one it certainly is 'most likely he will not; for as he is a known enemy to gambling, and has publickly declared that he will put the laws in execution against all ' fuch practices, it cannot be thought that he will permit a fellow who has kept an house that has been fo notorious for it, and where fo many men have been brought to the gallows, and their families to beggary, to hold a ' place of such profit under him; besides, he has people of his own to provide for, who have ' ferved his father and himself in such a manner as to deferve his confidence and regard, fo that every chance (to speak in his own way) is against this man, which is so well known, that nobody else would bid for the thing at all; wherefore, if I may presume to speak my opinion, his offer should be im-" mediately accepted.' There may be fome-'thing in what you fay; but then, if it was ' fo very precarious a place, do you think fome of his customers would not inform him of it! 'they certainly must know it.'--- Why, the very reason of my desiring your Grace to close with him directly is, for fear they should tell 6 him C 4

him, as they undoubtedly would, if they fuf-'pected his intention in the least; but he conceals it from them; for the principal motive of his quitting the business he is in, and seeking this place, is, because the greatest part of his customers have got deeply into his debt, which he can never expect them to pay, while he continues his business; whereas, he thinks, if he can get this place, it will be a good excuse for his calling in his money, and then the Lord-Mayor's power will protect him from their refentments. This is the true fecret of the matter; for, if it was not on this account, he has a much better opportunity of getting 'money where he is, than in any place.'-Well then, be it so! make the most you can of it; and I care not how foon the fellow is turned out after. - What is the matter? what 'do you laugh at?'---'I beg your Grace's e pardon, an odd thought just came in my head, but it does not fignify.'-- What is it? Come; 'I must know it.'- 'Why, I am almost ashamed to mention it; though it is but a trifle neither, as fuch matters go now. Your Grace knows that my husband has a place under the · Lord-Mayor! Now, it just came into my head, that when his Lordship comes to wait upon ' the King, to be knighted, it would be no bad 'joke, if his Majesty could be prevailed on to 'knight my husband also.'-- 'Ha! ha! ha! And fo madam has a mind to be a Lady. Why, with all my heart. There is no great matter in it, to be fure! and I fee no reason why you should not have that title as well as a chandler, or shoemaker's wife. Indeed, the candidates for knighthood have run fo very

low of late, that a man of honour should be ashamed to accept of it But that is no concern of mine! I got the money, and where I can do that, I care not if it was from Jack Ketch: let others look to that. Well: fince 'you have taken a fancy to stick a fool's feather in your cap, tell your good man, when he kneels by his mafter at the important ceremony, not to be too hasty to rise, and I'll take care your ambition shall be fatisfied; though I do not know what we must do then. Your · Ladyship will never condescend to put on my fhoes, or take away the bed-pan; fo that I believe I must look out for another servant.'— 'Your Grace is pleased to joke; but you are very well convinced, that I have no ambitionabove your service; and shall ever be proud to perform the meanest offices about you. Indeed, in this affair, I have more respect to your Grace's honour, than to myfelf. While · I wait upon you (and I would not give up that, to be made a countess) I am but your fervant, let me be called by what title I will : but, then, I think it is not proper that you fhould be waited on by common fervants, like any other person of your apparent rank. As: you are the fountain of all honour and nobility, you should have Nobles to attend you, as well as Knights, if I could have my wish. And it was this tenderness of your Grace's honour that made me fo particularly affected, at what happened yesterday.'-- Yesterday! I do not understand you!—What happened 'yesterday?'-- Your Grace may remember that you were fo kind fome time ago as toobtain leave for me, from the Lord of the C. 5 6 Manor.

Manor, to build a little poultry-house in a · corner of yonder common field. I accordingly fet the masons to work, and, liking the fituation, thought it was no great trespals to enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge, with a room or two, where I could have my clothes washed, and drink a dish of tea with a friend at any time I might have a mind to be retired; but, behold, after the wall of the yard was built, and the lodge raifed as high as the first story, the Bailiff of the manor happened to come by, and, feeing what I in-• tended, had the infolence to fly into a passion, and, faying it was an encroachment beyond the leave I had obtained, obliged the workmen to pull down every stone they had laid, though I myfelf, on receiving notice of it, went there, and told him it was by your Grace's order, and for your own use, and alledged the expense you had been at; but it was all to no • purpose, for he would not leave the place till his orders were executed: nor was this all; he has had the affurance also to fend me word this very morning that he would diffrain the cows, that you defired me to put to graze in that field, if I do not directly pay for their pafure, according to the rate he is pleased to charge; which is more than I have been able to · make of the milk; though, by your Grace's recommendation, I have had fo good customers for it; so that instead of the profit I expected to · make for you of your Dairy, your Grace is · like to be a loser.'- Infolent, unreasonable fellow! Not to be content with his own extravagant profits, without hindering every body else of coming in for the least advantage with him:

him: but he has neither shame, nor conscience, or else he would be satisfied with plundering the ponds, and felling the fish, and hiring out the grass as he does, without putting the parish to the expense of fencing in the common, to prevent the people even from walking over the grass! But, I may, some time or other, find a way to be even with him. He stands but badly in his master's favour, who despises such avarice, and would turn him out of his place directly, but that unluckily he has it, under his hand, for life; however, I shall watch every opportunity to return him the compliment; that I can affure him. Let him take fuch liberties with his equals! I'll have him to know, that he shall treat me with more respect.'

'That is true! has your Grace heard how cavalierly he behaved lately to the young Lord ? I forget his name. The great beau that made fuch a noise by dangling after the gentleman's wife.'--- 1 know whom you mean: No! I have heard nothing about him, what has been the matter?--'Ha! ha! ha! I do not believe I shall be able to tell it for laughing. Why, your Grace must know, that the Beau was walking, one ' morning, in a very plain drefs, across the upper part of the common, where happening to meet a farmer's maid, going to drive home her cows, he entered into chat with her, and prevailed upon her to quit the path, and walk with him into an unfrequented part of the field, where they fat down under a clump of trees, for the fake of a little very innocent conversation, 6 to be fure. Well; they had not been there

long, when one of the Under-bailiffs, whom this infolent fellow keeps to watch the grafs, feeing them go out of the road, followed them; and coming upon them in a very unfeafonable ' minute, not only interrupted their conversation, but also asked the Lord (whose quality he ' never suspected) in an imperious manner, how he dared to trample the grafs, and threatened to take him and his whore before a justice, and have them directly fent to Bridewell. 'This infult aggravated the offense of his intrusion to such a height, that the Lord, in a ' rage, bade the scoundrel instantly get out of his ' fight, or he would break his head. Such words, from a person of his appearance, raised ' the insolence of office so high, that the Bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his staff, and knocked his Lordship down, where he belaboured him feverely, repeating the word Scoundrel, between every blow, till the poor battered · Beau was in a most doleful plight, though he had often told him who he was, and roared out his quality with all his might; but the enraged fellow either did not, or pretended that he did onot, believe him.

When he had beaten him as much as he thought he could, without danger of the gallows, he dragged him along to the highway, where fortunately a coach happened to come by, the owner of which knew his Lordship, and took him up, ordering his servants to apprehend the Bailiss, but he was too nimble for them, and made his escape; and now finding his mistake, and the danger into which he had fallen, he went directly to his master, and telling him the story in the most favourable manner for himself, prevailed

prevailed upon him to promife to stand by him; particularly, as he alledged that the affair had proceeded from his great care of his master's grass, which could never be kept, if he should he left to suffer for defending it.

be left to fuffer for defending it. In the mean time, the poor Lord was in fo very bad a taking, that all the physicians and furgeons in town were gathered about him; by whose assistance he was confined to his bed for near a week. As foon as he was permitted to ' speak, and see his friends, he sent directly to the head Bailiff, to let him know how his man had ' used him; but all the satisfaction he could obtain, even when he went and applied in person, was to have the fellow removed to another part of the common; nor could he obtain this, till he declared that he would make his complaint directly to the Lord of the Manor, if he had onot some redress. It is faid, he talked of challenging him; but he is one of the grand jury of the court-leet, and therefore cannot be called 6 to an account that way."

CHAP. VII.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stockjobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character.

DY this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress's face sinished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance

ance was far from promising such an intimacy

with a lady of her rank.

The most shabby, squalid dress covered a distorted carcase, not much above four seet high, but so gross, that, laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow near as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy, curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his sigure.

This extraordinary person approached her Grace without introduction or ceremony, and, entering immediately upon business, told her,

- that he came to know if the meant to buy in that day, for the report raifed in the Alley, by
- their express from abroad, had given such a froke to the funds, that they had tumbled to
- the ground; but would most certainly rise again
- the next day, as foon as the news which had
- arrived that morning should be known; which could not be kept a secret as the people want-
- ed fomething to keep up their spirits, among
- fo many miscarriages, and divert them from
- making too close enquiries into the conduct of
- Why, my honest friend Aminadab! (replied
- her Grace) I must be directed in these matters by you. If you think there is any thing to be
- got by buying in to-day, with all my heart:
- though, I must own, I cannot conceive why you should fell out the very last week to

buy in this.'

- Ah! my Lady (returned Aminadab) there is a mystery in all business, and in none greater
- than our's. The Bulgarian King's success last week

week raifed people's spirits so high, that they thought the world was to be all their own, and therefore bought at any price. Now, that was the time for a prudent person to sell, as

I advised your Grace; which we had no sooner done, than instantly comes an express (of our

own) with an account that the enemy had turn-

ed upon him in their retreat, and entirely van-

quished the vanquishers.

This news quite overthrew the spirits raised by the former, and made every one eager to fell out at any loss, for fear the enemy should get wings and fly over, to take all they had. Now, as this was but a terror raised by ourselves, we take the advantage of it, and so buy in, when others are felling out, 20 per cent. cheaper than we ourselves sold out last week, when the made ness bent the other way, and may perhaps sell again the next, when another packet shall fet things right, and bring the people back their ' senses. For the senses of the people of this country are as inconstant as the sea, depending entire-' ly upon the winds that blow them news.'

But, is it really possible that any people can be fuch fools?'- O, please your Grace, they are only too rich! they have more money than they 'know what to do with; that is all.' -- 'Then ' Aminadab, we will ease them of some of the burthen. And would it not be better to conceal this news for another day; might not that make them ' fall still lower?' --- But, my Lady, the ' people want the good news.' --- ' The people " may hang themselves in despair! I care not, so I get money.'-- 'The government though.'--What is the government to me? I will get all I can, and then leave them to themselves, to sink or

/wim

fwim as they will; it is all one to me?' --- 'That is true; your Grace fays right. A people who do not know, or, at least, will not follow their own interest, are not worth any person's care, Ionger than while he can make fomething of them. But we must reserve that stroke for another time. This news has got into the offices, and nothing there is a fecret, you know. fides, the Panick was too violent to last; it begins to wear off already: in another day they would recover their fenses of themselves. I think, therefore, with your Grace's approbation, to buy in all I can to-day; without you had rather lay out your money in the supplies for the Protestants of Germany.'--- With all my heart, if you can make as much of it that way as in the funds; but not otherwise. I would not lose one ' shilling for any people under heaven!'

'Your Grace has a just notion of the world, and of the value of money that governs it. Indeed, 'I must fay, that the terms for these supplies are very unreasonable, considering how such things have been done for some time past. It is exe pected that people should bring in their money, without any premium, or other advantage, than what was publickly calculated for, at the granting them. But these economists will find themfelves mistaken. The world is wifer now adays, than to give up advantages which they have once gotten possession of. As to that affair, therefore, I should think it better to let it stand a little longer, till the necessity becomes more urgent, and then they will be glad to come into our terms, if it were not that the poor people e may be ruined in the mean time; so that indeed

I am at a loss what to advice your Grace to do,

in fo nice an affair. Why, let them be ruined then : it is not my fault; onor is it my business to save them; nor will I part with a shilling to do it. Besides, if they do suffer by the delay, those who gave them this supply to pree vent their ruin, may give them another to repair ' it.'- 'I cannot but admire your Grace's judge-" ment in all things. You are above the foolish weakness of nature, and have the noble resolution to fee your own family perish, rather than ' injure your own interest to relieve them. I fhall obey your Grace in all things. I go now to the Alley, where business will soon begin.'--Do, honest Aminadab, and fear not, though I could " not procure an establishment for your whole nation, as I would have done, I certainly will for your family, and that is enough for you. Your son shall be made a BARONET at least; you have riches enough to support the title?

'Your Grace is very good; our people are all fatisfied of your kind intentions: but, alas, that was a fevere disappointment to us, after costing us so much money. The children of the Lord weep over it in their synagogues, and the daughters of Sion lament it in their songs; but my household shall rejoice in thy savour, and the

Honest Aminadab was no sooner gone, than there entered an agent, seemingly of another nature, this dealing in honour as the other did in money; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the same.

'May it please your Grace (said he, advanceing with due reverence and ceremony) I come to wait upon you about that place in the --: ' that gentleman, will not, indeed cannot, give one ' shilling more for it.' Then, let the other have it; I will not lose five pence, much less five ' hundred pounds, for him.' --- But, please your Grace, you know what grounds he has to expect it on; besides your promise which canonot well be broken through, it was fo posi-' tive.'-- ' My promise was only conditional (in my own intention) that he should give me as much as another, and in no other sense will I keep it. · As for his grounds of expectations I regard them onot: let him make the most of them where he ' can.' -- ' Just as your Grace pleases; I only took the liberty of speaking my own opinion, but always in submission to your's. Not but I · must own I am apprehensive of this gentleman's · refentment, though not immediately for myfelf, 6 so much as for your Grace's character, with which he may be provoked to make too free " upon fuch an affair.' -- " Aye! that is liberty, · your boasted English liberty, to speak disrespectfully of your superiors. But I despise whatever he can fay: nor will I give up my own way for fear of his 'impertinence. Very right, your Grace is very right. It were by no means fit that you fhould: but then it is to be considered, whether this breach of promife may not be attended with inconveniencies that may overbalance the advantage, as it may make others afraid to deal with you at another time.' -- I will venture that : none come to me but for their own advantage, and while they can find that they will scarce stay away for punctilios. So, let me hear no more of this, but close with the other directly.' Will

Will not your Grace please to abate of your demand for that place in Ireland? I really fear 'you rate it too high,'--- 'Not a shilling! I will onot abate a shilling! surely I ought to know the · value of things in IRELAND by this time! I have bad sufficient dealings there to teach me; it has been my privy purse for many years.' But what I fear is, that if your Grace does not fix ' upon some one directly, the Lord Deputy may, and that would disappoint you; for this place has ever been immediately in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of dishonour on him to ' give it up.'--- 'Dishonour, indeed! I am much concerned for his honour certainly! And as for his naming any one to contradict me, I believe he will be cautious how he does that. The example of his predecessor will teach him --- However, if your Grace pleases, to prevent any difputes, I will wait on him, and tell him that ' you have a friend, whom you defign to recom-" mend.'-- With all my heart; you may if ' you will. But, as to the price, I will not abate one shilling, as I said before. Do not I know that places in that country are either mere pensions, without any thing to do; or even necessity of ever go-· verning there at all: or where that cannot be difpene sed with from the nature of the place, that no learning, no abilities are requisite. If it was here indeed, where knowledge in a profession is absolutely necessary to a place in it, there might be something in higgling about the price, but for a coward to scruple paying for being made a general, or a blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more unreasonable; and I will not hear another word about it -But what have you done about those titles which I gave you to dispose of?'--- Really, 6 I do

I do not know what to fay to your Grace about them: the bent of the people does not feem to ' incline to honours of late.' -- ' No! I thought they were always as good as ready money; especi-· ally with those who have more money than sense, and think it easier to buy, than earn bonour by 6 merit. An IRISH title was the constant refuge of those sons of fortune, who not being born in the · rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it by their villainies, were desirous of changing their names for sonorous titles, to hide their disgrace, as it were, under an heap of honours, which in reality only · make them the more exposed to the view, and confequently to the censure, of the world. ——But I find even that imaginary sense of honour is gone out of fashion, and the shadow is in no more request than the substance, at present. But, since they are grown such a drug, even make the most you can of them: fell them to whoever will buy; I shall take " no exceptions to persons." 'I shall certainly do the best I can for your Grace, though they have been so oddly given away of late, that I verily believe people are ashamed of taking them, for fear of being laughed at. Rattles are given to children, but titles to old men, to divert them; to some, in reward for

and to others, for doing nothing at all.

But, pray, has your Grace feen the old Colonel

yet! he got his commission yesterday: I wish

onot doing the very worst possibly in their power;

he may mean your Grace fairly.'-- Why?
fure, you do not imagine he can have the affurance

to think of playing me a trick?' --- I do not positively say so: but his behaviour has been

very mysterious.

Just

Just then a servant let her Grace know, that the very Colonel, of whom they were talking, defired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought so (said fine) show him up: I thought he would not dare to trifle with me!

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old foldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

HE Colonel advanced to her Grace with the affurance of confcious virtue sparkling in his eye, though sharpened by a cast of indignation. I come (faid he) please your Grace, to return ' you my thanks for your favours: I have got my commission, and had the honour, just now, to kiss his majesty's hand upon it. As your recommendation was more effectual to procure methis reward than the labours of a life which has not been undiffinguished in the service, I thought it my duty to make your Grace this acknowledgement, and to offer you any service in the power of an honest heart, and no bad hand, ' in return.'- 'Colonel (replied her Grace) I am glad it has been in my power to serve a man of your character, and I do not desire any such re-' turn.'-- 'I am much obliged to your Grace for your good opinion (returned he) which I hope I shall never forfeit. I thank God, my character will not difgrace your recommendation;

onor shall you ever have reason to blush at the mention of my name. I have the honour to be

' your Grace's most humble servant.' But, Colonel (faid the gentleman, the agent, who stood by) though her Grace has no occafion for fuch a return as you offer, having no quarrels to be fought, there is a return of another nature which you should not forget, especially as you promised it too.'—— Why · look you, Sir (replied the colonel) as to that matter, it is most certain that I did, something 6 like, promise some such thing, but when I have told the whole affair honestly to her Grace, I am ' fure she will be above demanding it.'-Sir (said her Grace) I do not desire to hear any thing more about it! And I must tell you, that 'you have behaved like an old knave.'-Say an old foldier, rather, madam (replied he, with some warmth) the other is a term I am not " used to.' --- 'A nice distinction truely, and well worthy of a man of honour' (faid the agent with a fneer.)— Have a care, Sir, guard ' your expressions; my respect, my obligations to her Grace will make me bear any thing from her; but I must be so free as to tell you, that I have not the fame fentiments for you.'--What are you going to make a riot in my apart-" ments!'--- Not in the least, madam; my respect for your Grace is a sufficient security from that. I would only hint it to that gentleman, that he may not always have the protection of your Grace's presence; that is all, madam.'— You are a knavish old russian. But I shall take care that you do not come off so.'-- As your Grace pleases for that. By the laws of my country I cannot lose my commission while I do my

duty, nor will my gracious master be influenced to do me wrong, though, in the multiplicity of greater affairs, my fervices, my hardships could not reach his eye. But as I would not bear the imputation of any crime, much more so black ones as dishonesty or ingratitude, you must give me leave to fet this affair in a just light to your Grace now, especially as I may never have another opportunity of doing myself that justice. ' Enraged almost to desperation to find, that thirty years fervice, the merits of which were often written in my blood, and stand recorded in these scars, were not sufficient to procure ' me the regular advances of my rank, without a · merit of another nature, I refolved to quit the barren paths which I had fo long purfued in vain, and try those methods which I saw practised with success by others: I therefore applied my ' felf to your Grace, who feemed struck with my hardships, and promised me your favour, referring me, for more particular information, to ' this gentleman, who would have lowered my fense of your goodness, by loading it with terms which were not in my power to fulfil.

felf, I should most certainly have owned my inability; but, coming from him, I looked upon them as the finesse of his own art, which it was not unjustifiable to return with a feint of mine; and therefore I gave an equivocal acquiescence with his proposal, for he dares not say I made a particular or positive promise of any thing.

'If I have done wrong in this I am mittaken,
and forry for it, but still it is not within the
article of war, that makes an error in judgment
criminal, because it was not against an enemy;

but by all the rules of war, and that is my profession, and the only one I have studied, it is al-

· lowable to oppose art to art, and try to foil the

devil at his own weapons. This is what I have done; and the success of this stratagem, which

has effected by a Coup de Main what I had been

making regular advances to fo long in vain, proves the justness of my plan, and must ex-

tort your Grace's approbation, when the passion

raised by this gentleman's mercenary influence

fhall cool.'

Saying this the veteran marched off in triumph leaving my mistress and her agent staring at each

other in the strongest surprise.

Her Grace found utterance first, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent: 'So then (faid she) after all, I find the

old ruffian has outwitted you, with a general promife, or no promife at all, it feems, for you did

onot dare to contradict him. I thought, Sir, that

· I had cautioned you before against this very

thing, and given you positive orders to take nothing but the money. But you shall pay for your

e neglect ! you shall make good the loss to me. As

for the old ruffian, I will speak to his general, and

have him broke for a cheat. Talk to me of his

fervices! what are his fervices to me! but I will have him broke; his example shall terrify

others from attempting to abuse me so again.

· I wish it were proper or possible, replied her agent, as foon as want of breath made her stop, for your Grace to have him punished for his infolence; but fuch a tongue as his might

· lay matters too open, if once fet a-going, for

you fee he is not to be over-awed to any thing.

· As for his commission, there is no loss in it; for

for it was ordered for him before I applied; though I made him think it was obtained by vour interest, to try what I could bring him to. Your Grace may be affured that I would not have taken any promise, had it been otherwife; and I was just going to tell you this, when his coming prevented me.'- 'It may be fo (returned she;) but I shall be better fatiffied of it, before I give up your making good " the lofs."

The agent was relieved from further persecution for that time, by the entrance of a messenger, who was going to Germany, and called to know if her Grace had any commands for her friends there.- ' None but my good wishes and prayers for their deliverance (replied she, with a deep drawn figh) which are constantly offered up for them. I am forry I am not able to fend them any relief from myself; but I have nothing in my power, no places, no opportunities of getting any thing: thefe few pieces' (taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where she had thrown the Bishop's change of her note) are all, at present, in my possession; give 6 them to my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her I will fend her the clothes she wrote for, as foon as possible: and assure the rest of my friends of my constant attention to their interest.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL changes his service for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his singers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSAL into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win.

I Was, by this time, so sick of High Life, that I was very glad of being one of the number her Grace gave to the messenger, as I saw no prospect of pleasure in such a service. He had no sooner received her Grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his dispatches, where he was sent on another errand, while

they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch who fold glyfter-pipes about the streets, but being unable to get bread in his profession, had fallen upon a scheme that he imagined might raise him to the notice of the world in the light of a state criminal, and get him his hunger well satisfied, while he should be an happy prisoner for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad consequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correspondence with some person abroad, of equal consequence with himself, and to him communicated the secret intelligence which he daily picked up at cossee-houses, or sound in the pub-

lic

lic news-papers, which his great friend was to forward to some great person in the service of the

enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the post-office, but the stuff contained in them was thought below regard; so that he began to fear that this scheme would turn to no account. But now some miscarriages in publick affairs, alarming the resentment of the people, making it evident that the secrets of the nation were betrayed, this insignificant creature was thought of,

and ordered to be taken into custody.

Though this was the thing which he had always proposed by his undertaking; to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the strongest terrors, and put on every appearance of conscious guilt, so far, that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a facrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude: a just judgment on the base depravity of soul, that could descend to so iniquitous a scheme, as to triste with his facred duty to his country, to support an anxious, burthensome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before fo very strong against him, but also made it probable that he was guilty of more than he was at first even suspected of: this justified the profecuting him with the utmost severity, and facrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for some victim, to atone for

their reproachful losses.

The criminal foon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had faid; but this D 2 was

was not admitted him; his own confessions had confirmed the charge against him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of such strong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved against him, but what he showed the publick authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forseit.

But the contemptibility of his station and behaviour proved his safety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had served the turn, and amused the people for

his day.

I did not then stay in England, to see the event of this affair, but having learned it since my return, I thought it better to conclude the story in this place together, than to interrupt my narra-

tive with it, at another time.

It would be doing injustice to my master, to imagine that he had profited so little by his frequent intercourse with persons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it necessary to apply the money she had given him to any other use than his own: accordingly, when he was setting out, he gave me to his wife, for the support of his family in his absence.

But this spirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herself any of the genteel pleasures of life, for the sake of such a mean, domestick duty, as the care of a family. As soon therefore as his back was turned, she put on her hat and cardinal, and posted away to one of her most intimate acquaintances, a lady who kept a chandler's shop in the neighbourhood, to advise with her, about settling

fettling a party, at her house, for the next

evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly, after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they fat in being open to the shop, so that they were liable to be overheard by every one who should come in. and there, over a comfortable glass of right Hollands, fixed upon the company, and fettled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. great business being dispatched, my mistress returned home, and getting a gentleman who lodged in her house, at the expence of the state, to write cards for her, fent them by her husband's affistant to the company, to invite them to play a game at cards, and fpend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation she made, raised my curiosity not a little, to see the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked by such a set; but I was disappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper, next morning, for wine and brandy for the occa-

fion.

My new master was a striking instance of the inconsistency of life, and the hypocrify of the human heart: he had for many years kept one of the most notorious brothel-taverns in the town; but not content with this publick insult to the laws, in defiance of every sense of shame, he at the same time professed himself a reformer of religion; and while the grossest scenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly in his house, was chaunting hymns in a conventicle, and groaning in spirit, for the wickedness of the D₃

times, with a face as meagre and mortified as the picture of famine. I fee you wonder at such a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which shows instances as gross as this; the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pandar to fuch an house as he now kept, when the demure fanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families, and accomplish feductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By these means, he foon acquired a fum of money sufficient to set up this house for himself; when his character immediately brought him into business that in a little time made his fortune; but, for this success he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for having observed in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private finner like a publick faint, as foon as he thus rose above the drudgery of business, and, from porter, became master of a tavern, he affociated himself with a set of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whose meetings he had an opportunity of finding out new faces for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who, observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their fecret meetings, to fettle their bufinefs, laugh at the follies they lived by, and practife the vices which they preached against. Such fuccess might be thought to have satisfied his avarice,

avarice, but the habit has taken such hold of him that he cannot defift, and he now does from inclination, what was at first the effect of ne-

ceflity.

I should not have dwelt so long upon his character, but that it serves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their course of life whenever they please; and as foon as their end is answered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profession, quit it at once, and live virtuously

upon the earnings of vice. The evening after I came into his possession, the high priest of the conventicle called upon him, to spend an hour in spiritual conversation. After examining into his progress in grace, and the increase of his faith, and assurance of election (for fuch is the power of custom, and the pleasure of cheating the world, that they practife the art even upon each other) he told him that he had a most particular occasion, for his most private room that evening. 'For (faid he, shaking him by the hand) my friend, as I have found, by experience, that the only way to foil the Devil, is at his own weapons, I have appointed Momus the ballad-finger, whose attack upon me has made fuch a noise, to meet me here this evening, and make up the affair over a glass of wine.'— In truth (answered my master, a good deal fur- prised) your reverence's meekness and patience ' must needs be very great; or you could not bear ever to mention him, in any degree of christian charity and benevolence, after so outrageous and grofs an attack as he has made ' upon you, without the least personal provoca-D 4

tion; for what was that to him, what you faid or did to the rest of the world, his morals or reli-

sion were in no danger! But you were born to

be an example to the age, and a shining light,

to guide the steps of the faithful.'

A truce with this canting now, my friend, (replied the Doctor) and let us talk a few words like men of the world. Your proved fidelity and prudence making me not scruple to · reveal the whole mystery of the ministry to you, I will let you into the secret of this affair. · You must know, then, that I have, for some time, perceived the humour of the people bee gin to waver greatly, and the fervency of their devotion to cool, in spite of all I could do to ' keep it up, by preaching, fasting, prayer, and · lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and the wonderful effect of my spiritual labours; it was necessary, therefore, to have recourse to fome expedient, to prevent their falling off entirely, and accordingly I pitched upon this, which has exceeded my expectations: for, ' instead of making my people ashamed of com-' ing to me, it has piqued their pride, and now they resolve to show, that they scorn as much to be laughed, as preached, out of their own way. This, my friend, is the way of the world, which, fince we cannot in reality mend, we " must only strive to make the best of. If I could carry on my business without this assistance, I · most certainly would never have entered into fuch a confederacy, any more than you would · keep a brothel, and entertain whores and rogues, if you could make equal profit by any other company,

· I am

I am much obliged to your reverence (returned my master) for putting me in any degree of comparison with yourself; but it is too great an honour! I act in a low sphere; but I still have the pleasure to think, that, even ' in my poor way, I contribute fomething towards your great work; as there could not be fo many converts to refort to you for spiritual comfort, if there were no places of this kind to encourage vice and debauchery. You fee, Sir, that I enter into the spirit of your defign, and deferve your confidence, by this re-There are fecrets in all proturn of mine. fessions; and as you have entered into a league with your professed enemy, that you may be able to play into each other's hands, fo I, notwithstanding the probity of my profession, have a private understanding with all the ladies of opleasure who resort to this house, who, in return for their being brought into good company, never fail to enhance expence, and countenance every imposition of false measures, false charges, and a thousand others, by which a prudent man turns the folly of the world to his own advantage. As to this confederacy between you and the ballad-finger, I own I never suspected the least of it; and, indeed, I still am at a loss to think how you could bear the personal reflections, especially, which he has thrown upon you. What was the miffortune of your form to him, that he should. 'call you Dr. Hunch-Back?'- Why that is true enough (answered the Doctor:) in that he exceeded my directions; and to call him to account for it, is part of the business of this appointment. Every thing was fettled between " us.

" us. We have hitherto met at our friend Mrs.

Brimstone's, who first negociated the affair be-

tween us, and consented to take her share of the ridicule, to advance the common cause.

· She will be here to-night too, fo that we shall

have an agreeable set. I believe I hear him

fust come in. I directed him to enquire for number one; do you show him into the pri-

vate room, and when the coast is clear I'll

' join you.'

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted balladsinger. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike.

HE person my master was sent to meet had something so uncommon in his appearance, as instantly struck my attention. Every passion of the human heart was printed in his sace so strongly, that he could at pleasure display it in all its force, while his every look and gesture turned some vice or folly into ridicule. 'You enquire for number one, Sir!' (said my master, bowing with the prosoundest respect.) 'I do, Sir' (answered the other, returning his bow, assuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from despair) enquire for number one.'

Though my master was no stranger to his talents, which he had often seen him display at the expence of others, this personal application

of them to himself threw him into such confusion, that, in spite of his long-practifed affurance, a blush broke feebly through his unimpassioned, lifeless. face, and he had scarce power to show him into the room. The ballad-finger feeing that he had him at command, would not purfue his advantage any farther, at that time, for fear of frightening him away; but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, I am come, my friend and brother in the Lord (faid he) to enquire into thy spiritual estate, to give thee ghostly advice, and commune with thee, for a short space, for our mutual edifica-'tion.'——The furprife and manner of this address had such an effect upon my master, that he could not refrain burfting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confusion into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

They were scarce seated, when the Doctor entered, and addressing himself to the stranger, · I am glad to fee you, Sir,' (faid he, taking him by the hand) ' and heartily congratulate you on your success. You see, I was not mistaken in 'my judgement. I knew what would take with the taste of the public. There is nothing pleases. them so much as a little profaneness, and ridicule of Religion: a fling at the Clergy never fails to raise a laugh.'--- I acknowledge: 'your judgement, Sir' (answered the other, raifing up his shoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the Doctor's voice) and thank you for your congratulation; but I must beg leave to differ in opinion with you, as to the cause of my success, for I have never had the least fling at the Clergy, nor been guilty D 6

of profaneness, or ridiculing religion, in my ballad; the abuse of religion by hypocrify,

and making the profession of virtue a fanction

for the practice of vice, were the objects of my fatire; and the reception it has met with from

the publick shows that the people have a proper

fense of such vices.'

The Doctor was fo struck at the reflection of himself, when the other began to speak, that he started, in the utmost astonishment, and was unable to interrupt him till he had finished his difcourfe, which else he certainly would have done, while my mafter stood almost convulsed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-finger turning short upon him, and instantaneously assuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the same manner, 'And you, Sir (con-' tinued he, addressing himself to him) must have had ample experience, in the course of your bufiness, that the taste of the town inclines quite

another way, the most profligate in practice

being the most pious in profession.'

This sudden transition from the Doctor restored him to his spirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing most immoderately at the filly look of my master, though he was not quite fo much abashed as he had been before.

As foon as the Doctor could speak, ' However I may doubt your opinion (faid he to the ballad-finger) I acknowledge the irrefift-· ible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg

a ceffation of them for a moment, till we talk of our bufinefs. I will not dispute about

* the cause of your success, but I think you need not

onot have fallen upon my person. My professions and practice surely were enough, with your own

exaggerations! Why, then, need you give me the opprobrious nick-name of Hunch-Back,

which has spread so, that I shall never get rid of it? The very children haunt me with it,

as I go along the ffreets.'

Good Heavens (answered the other) how sub-'ject are the wisest men to the weakness of vanity! I should have thought that you were long fince proof to any thing the world could fay of you, or you would have given up your trade before now. As to my calling you this name, vou must know that the whole success of our 'scheme depended upon it; for if I had not ' turned the ridicule against your person, the tafte of the publick is so gross, that I might have ' laughed alone at your opinions. But what ' fuccess have you had? Do you find your flock gather upon this attack on their shepherd?'-Why, pretty well (replied the Doctor) pretty well. They feem to show a proper fense of it. As for me, I appear affected at it in a very extraordinary manner, that is folely upon your account; and to convince them and all the world of the strength of my charity, I de-'fign to-morrow to offer up prayers for your conversion, as being in a dangerous state of ' falvation, and then, on the merit of that, to propose a subscription for the relief of two or three families, whom your example has led into ruin.'--- Bravo, Doctor (interrupted the other) tell me of profaneness again! But I hope I am to have a share in the subscription, as it is to be proposed on my account; at least, you will let me assift in the distribution of it.' ---· Take

Take care, my friend! (returned the Doctor:)
another word of that kind, and I declare off
the connection. I will have nobody pry into
my conduct, or interfere with my business. I
did not ask any part of your gains, though you
got so much in every company where you sung
your ballad; nor did I speak a word in behalf
of the other poor ballad-singers you picked up
about the streets, and set to sing for you, though
the wretches complained that you starved
them.'

The ballad-finger perceiving that he had touched upon a tender point, thought proper to wave it, as he did not choose to break off so advantageous a connection. 'As to that (faid he) · I did but jest. I never interfere with any man's matters. But that's true! I have bad news to tell you! The clerk of the parish sent me word yesterday, that, understanding I sung my ballad to a pfalm-tune, he let me know, that · I must change my note directly, or he would order the beadles to whip me out of the parish, if ever I prefumed to fing there again; and to mend the matter, at the same time ordered me to make use of an old, black-guard tune, which he fent me, the vulgar stupidity of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which has never turned against the tune itself, but solely against the pro-· stitution of it; which can never be so effectually attacked, as by repeating the manner exe actly in which it is fung. But, where is our friend Brimstone? I expected to have met her here.'

Just as he said this, my master was called out, where he found a venerable Matron, supported

by two chairmen, who enquiring in a feeble voice for number one, he directly showed her in to the company.

CHAP. XI.

A vencrable Matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. Momus plays successively upon Dr. Hunch-Back, and Mother Brimstone. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character.

HE Matron, whom my master was handing in to his friends, displayed one of those figures, which lose by the most forcible description. Her face, though broken by debauchery and disease, preserved the remains of a most pleasing sweetness and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almost out of every resemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchies almost concealed a piece of greasy stannel. Her gown, of the richest silk, slowed loosely round her, under a velvet cloak, lined with ermine; while her legs and feet, swoln out of all shape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapped up in stannels.

My master received this amiable creature from the chairmen; and stooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, assisted her to limp into the room. The contrast between her and the shabby skeleton of her supporter was so strikingly ridiculous, that the

moment

moment they appeared, Momus burst into an immoderate fit of laughter; and turning to the Doctor (who was not much less affected, though practice had given him fuch a mastery over the muscles of his face, that they never betrayed the passions of his heart) 'Behold (faid he) the bleffed fruit of thy ministry, and rejoice! See how the spirit assisteth the slesh to struggle with the ' infirmities of nature.' --- And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, ' Dear mother (addressing himself to her) give me your other arm; rest a little part of your weight, an hundred or two, upon me! Come! Let me help 'you into that great chair!'-- 'Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones! (exclaimed she.) How you pull " me along! You will tear me to pieces! Oh! oh!'- Never fear, mother! Never fear that! (answered he.) Crazy as your carcase is, it will flick a little longer together. Your friends are onot ready for you yet.'---- Go! go! you're a wicked creature, a profane wretch.'---Dear Doctor! I thought I should never see you. more! I had a fad night of it; a most fad one, indeed. But the Spirit comforted me. Oh! if it were not for the comforts of the Spirit, there would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was purely when you left me! Your pious conversation had comforted my heart; and the other bottle we cracked together raised my spirits fo, that I forgot all my pains. But 1. was not to be so happy long! Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way! 'This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his roaring companions, came in upon me, just as you went out at the back-door! Well!

to be fure they have a great deal to answer for ! I was just beginning to read my pious exhortation you left me, when in they came, fnatched the book out of my hand, and, calling for the Ladies, infifted on my fitting with them; 6 fo, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, 'I could not refuse. But, alas! I paid dearly for it this morning! My poor bones! And then 'my head! My poor head is quite gore, quite gone! I can bear nothing!——Oh, what a difference there is between spending an evening in edifying conversation over a sober bottle, with a pious friend or two, and these ranting riotous scenes! though they behaved so blike gentlemen, and were fo good company, that there was no leaving them! But, it is all 'folly ! all vanity! I am refolved I will leave it off! I will not follow it much longer, I am re-'folved! I'll wean myself from this world, and think of nothing but a new life! ---- I hope the Baronet won't use poor Betsey ill! I did not blike his refusing to taste the ratafia! I should be ruined if any thing ailed her! She is more enquired for than all the ladies in the house.-And my Lord—He is sweet company. But it is a pity he is fo wicked! He was going to burn my book of devout exercises; and then, that profane fong of your's! what need he fing that! I wonder what pleasure people can find 'in profaneness! Where there is any enjoyment, it is another thing; but this is being wicked for wickedness sake. It is a great pity, for he 'is a very generous, fine gentleman! He gave " Poll ten guineas this morning! He is very fond of Poll; he always has her when Betsey is engaged. Oh! oh! shall I ever get rid of 6 thefe these pains! When shall I be happy in Hea-

While she was running on thus, the Doctor was busied in writing a letter to himself, as from a family in distress, for whom he intended to sollicit a subscription the next day from his congregation; and my master was laying glasses on the table, and drawing the corks out of several bottles; so that Momus alone attended to her, by the significant archness of whose look it was easy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for suture entertainment, and would not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse never so long; but the Doctor's turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

I am forry, my friend (faid he, addreffing himself to her) to hear you complain so! I left you in a bleffed temperature of mind and body · last night, but I much fear that the intemper-· ance you mentioned must have equally disturbed 6 both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth when he is full of wine! A 6 little is good, and rejoiceth the heart; but too much marreth the understanding, and letteth f loofe the fecrets of the wife.' --- ' As for that there, dear Doctor, never fear me! Since the bleffed hour of my call, I have never difclosed one secret about the matter: I never · mention a word of it. -- But, Doctor, what did you do with the young Lady whom you would see home last night? I would not refuse you, to be fure; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head! She is very young, and likely to do a great deal of bufiness, 6 there-

therefore her call need not come this great while! It will be time enough fome years hence! I had a great deal of trouble to bring her to; and now, if you have spoiled her, I shall have all the work to do over again. Nobody knows the trouble and expense I am at for the service of the publick-Nobody knows! If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced to take up with common fervant-maids, and fuch low-lived creatures; but I provide gentlewomen for them: Ladies of birth and education! and yet I am onot regarded! Nobody thanks me! This is poor encouragement to ferve the publick, very poor, 'indeed! But virtue is its own reward! that's my comfort. I do the best I can; and if I do not receive a proper return, that is not my fault! Let the world answer for it! I do my part; and fo my mind is at ease.'-

'That you do! (faid Momus, while the stopped to drink) that you do! Your diligence never flackens! Come, fill your glass. Here's to the reformation of manners, a work that we all labour in alike.' -- By your leave, good Sir (interrupted the Doctor, with a look and tone of offended importance) not all alike, I presume! I believe you will allow, that there is some difference between your profession and mine, at 'least.'- So then (answered Momus) you are returning to the old point! I thought I had faid enough to you on that head before! Difference! 'aye! that there is indeed; but perhaps you are 'not fensible in whose favour that difference is! 'I fing a fong that makes people laugh; and put ' vice and folly out of countenance, by showing them in a ridiculous light, and this only for a f trifling

trifling pittance of that money which they devote to mere pleasure. But you, by drawing hor-' rours that never existed out of your own imaegination, and preaching up doctrines impof-'fible to practife, frighten your poor deluded fol-· lowers out of every enjoyment of their lives, and pillage them of the money that should support their families and pay their debts, under pretence of imaginary charities! This is the difference between us.'- Good lack! good lack! (in-' terrupted the fage matron) how can people be fuch fools as to fall out thus about nothing! What fignifies it where the difference lies, fo 'you can both do your business? It is just the fame thing as if my landlord here, and I, should enter into a dispute about the reputation of our houses. I thought I had made you both promise 'never to mention this matter any more! Come, · Doctor! here's prosperity to all our business, without any such foolish distinctions.'-

The judgement of this mediation was too plain to admit of any dispute. The competitors filled their glaffes, and, shaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toast. 'Well, now there is fome pleafure in this (continued fhe:) things are 'like to go on well, when all parties agree; but when some people fall out—you know the rest of the saying ——— But, my friend Momus, I have news for you! That story of the 'young Lady, that you put in your ballad, has answered just as I said. The world thought it would blow me up; but I knew better! I never had a greater run of company in my life than to enquire into that affair; and they all of the right fort-your fecret, grave, old, rich culls, ' just fit to do business with. At first, I always 6 deny deny it with the strongest oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing fuch a fcandalous story; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard by the liquor, I feem to place a confidence in their professions of secrecy and friendship, and, with many tears, own the whole; that is, so far as to my having the Lady in my power; and then the confequence is, that they all intreat me to let them fee her (that is, fingly, for fuch chaps always come alone;) when, fuch is the pleasure in debauch-' ing virtue, that, besides making me a handsome present for my kindness, they leave no tempta-' tion untried to prevail upon the Lady, whom they generally take to themselves upon a gen-' teel fettlement; by which means I have got a f pretty fum, and have besides had an opportunity of providing for near a dozen of my women, who were too well known upon the town to do any thing in the publick way; for this kind of customers have too great a regard for their characters, ever to mix in company that might undeceive them! So, you fee, Doctor, that I do not forget your instructions of doing all the good in my power; and fure it is no small matter to rescue so many poor women, who were no longer capable of getting a genteel ' livelihood for themselves, from want and mifery, and getting them a comfortable fettle-" ment for life, fo that they have nothing to do now, but attend to you, and make their peace with heaven. —— Come! here's my ' fervice to you, my friend Momus; and if you can think of any other story of me, that can ferve your turn, and get off another ballad, " never spare me! I'll forgive you.'--- And

' fo will I too (added the Doctor) though he ' should call me a worse name than Hunch-back! Let them laugh who win. While our railing at each other in publick answers our own ends. we were fools to drop it; as to the deceit in it, it is a virtue; for fure it is better to live thus in friendship and charity with all mankind, than to be the real enemies we feem; and fo, Sir, here's my hearty service to you. And let ' us purfue our works in concert, without any more of these broils. So let us drink about, for an hour or two; for I must leave you early, • being obliged to write an exhortation for the old Duchess, which I must carry her early in the morning, when the defigns to vifit her cousin, the Colonel, who is under fentence s of death in Newgate, for murther; not that I think either that, or her preaching, will have any effect upon him; but she will try: and I do not care to disoblige her, as she is not only a good fubscriber on all occasions, but also a credit to our conventicle, which would never have rifen into fuch esteem with the people, if fome persons of quality had not brought it into fashion.'-- Why, aye to be fure, there is a * great deal in that (added the Matron:) fashion is a powerful thing. If it was not for that, I could never do the business I do. But, since the onobility have made it a fashion to marry their mistresses, there is no great difficulty in bringing a private gentleman's daughter into our way of life, as it gives her the only chance she can possibly have, of making her fortune, and becoming a Lady; for, as to the example of those few, who married Ladies of virtue for mere love, it was too old-fashioned, and ro-· mantick.

mantick, to have any influence. But that's true, Doctor, I forgot to mention fomething to you last night, that has given me great concern! · How could you be so indifcreet as to accompany that highwayman to Tyburn the other day? And then to take his hand, and kifs it, before all the people! Fie! it turns my stomach to think of it! I do not know how you can exe pect any lady will ever let you kifs her lips after ' fuch a filthy action. Befides, it is a scandal to all your congregation, that you should appear fo familiar with fuch low-lived creatures, and ' feems a kind of encouragement to their crimes. If you had heard what remarks two or three ladies, who called at my house yesterday evening, made upon it, I am fure you would never do it again.'--- Go to, woman! Go to! ' (answered the Doctor, with a contemptuous (look) take the beam out of thine own eye before you find fault with the mote in your neighbour's What highwayman's crimes are equal to your's! The greatest danger of scandal that I ever ran has been in condescending to keep company with you. In that, indeed, I may be faid, with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage the basest crimes.'——

The Matron, who, with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook such an insult as this, even from her spiritual guide, but catching up her glass, in the madness of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, she slung it at his head with all her strength, and with such an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground—— Woman! (sputtered she, as foon as her passion permitted her to articulate a word.) Woman! Call your women about you!

I fcorn your words, you canting, hypocritical, ' vicious wretch, who, under the appearance of · fanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools that mind you. You condescend to keep me company! you! a creature who would never have been taken notice of had it not been for " me! Did not I point you out the persons proe per for you to work upon? Was it not I that introduced you to those very people of quality that now make you give yourfelf fuch airs? Were they not most of them my acquaintances, and even indebted to me for the rank they now enjoy? I'll make you know yourfelf, you scoundrel, I will! I'll expose you to the world, and then fee who will go to your conventicle, or subscribe to your sham chari-

ties! I'll make you know how to treat your fuperiors for the future.'——

While the enraged Matron thus vented her fury, Momus and my mafter raised the Doctor from the ground, in a pickle not to be described. The glass had been thrown with such strength, that, had not his skull been of a comfortable thickness, his labours would have been at an end. However, it had made fuch a gash upon his temple, that he was in a moment in a gore of blood. The fight of this terrified them all! The Matron fainted (or pretended to faint) away; my master ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while Momus supported the Doctor in his chair; but the first fight of the wound convincing him that it was not dangerous, he refolved to increase the accident to that diversion which was the great pursuit of his life.

Good Heaven! (said he in a low voice, as if fpeaking to himfelf, and with all the appearance of diffress.) What will become of us all! We ' shall all be ruined by this unfortunate affair, even ' if we escape the death which inevitably awaits the wretched murtheress.'- O Sir! (said the Doctor, alarmed almost to despair) What do you think? Am I a dead man? Speak, I conjure 'you; give me fome hopes!'--- Alas, my friend! I wish I could; but I must not flatter a man in your condition! If you have any concerns in this life to fettle, delay not a moment. This horrid fracture in your skull threatens ime mediate death. Heavens! (stooping, and pre-' tending to look earnestly) how his brain works!' - O what shall I do! (exclaimed the terrified wretch.) I cannot die! I am not fit to die! ' Oh! that I had followed fome honest trade, and e never taken to this of preaching! I might then have earned honest bread as my forefathers did, and escaped this miserable death, and the more horrid fate that awaits me! What shall I do? What will become of me? How can I even pray to that God, whom I have fo often provoked by ' my hypocrify and crimes!'---

My master, by this time, had wiped the wound; and seeing, that though it bled so violently, from the number of little vessels that are in that part, there was no fracture of the skull, and therefore no danger in it, 'Be comforted, 'Sir (said he) you have time enough to prepare 'yourself for death! I'll insure you from any 'danger this time!'—'How, my dearest, best friend! (said the Doctor, catching his hand, and kissing it in extasy) Is my life safe? Is not the wound mortal?'—'Mortal! no! nor even Vol. II.

dangerous, if the surgeons do not make it so!
Give me leave to put a plaister to it, which I
always have in readiness in the house, in case
of accidents, as gentlemen often quarrel for
their women in their liquor; and I'll engage
that it shall give you no further trouble. Many
a guinea have I got by it; for, when any such
thing happens, I immediately slip on a full
trimmed suit, a bag wig, and a sword, which
a surgeon once pawned to me for a debt of two
guineas, and up I go, do the job, take my
fee, and come away as good a surgeon as the
best! Never fear, Sir: I'll insure you from
this scratch.

The confolation which this news gave the Doctor is not to be expressed. He hugged and kissed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himself, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cause of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a swoon. But Momus, who faw his fport with the Doctor thus cut short, foon brought her to herfelf; for taking a glass of brandy, as if to hold to her nose, in the affected aukwardness of his hurry and confusion he spilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper, to try what that would do, he defignedly neglected to blow it out, and fo, holding it to her nose, set the brandy he had spilled upon her face on fire. This inftantly awoke her from her fwoon. She shrieked out, when he, in the fame affected confusion, flung the bason of bloody water, in which the Doctor's wound had been washed, full in her face. This, indeed, quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and difagreeable as that of my master or the Doctor; the consequence of which was,

was, that the Doctor could not refrain from burfting out a laughing. Well, my friend (faid he,

taking her by the hand) it is but just that you flould share in the effects of your own rashness:

But, let there be no more of it. We have both

been in fault perhaps; and so let us only be more

cautious for the future. What I have fuffered

was done by defign, and had like to have been attended with dreadful confequences; your's is

' all accidental and trifling.'-

While the Doctor was thus piously making peace, my master was cleaning himself, and setting the room to rights. Momus affifted the Matron to cram half a dozen napkins down her bosom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with fo well acted an anxiety and care, that even the was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her to his confusion; and being glad to get fo well off an affair that might have ended fo much worse, she complied with the Doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and fo all things were restored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor's wound, by a ready presence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from some of Momus's gang, who had attempted to affaffinate him, in revenge of the contempt into which he had brought their mafter.

Matters being thus happily settled, the rest of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a song in character by each of the company, of which Momus's was the most humorous, my master's the grossest, the Matron's the loosest, and the Doctor's the most daringly profane; perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late re-

E 2

ligious qualms. After this, the company broke up, when the Doctor, having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then returned to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRY-SAL enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the Prison. Her Grace's character.

HOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the Exhortation which he was to carry to her Grace the next morning. Not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself; his time was too precious to be employed fo: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other, as vifiting his great profelytes, receiving and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the facerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoined by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake

them voluntarily; but still, to secure to himselfevery degree of religious merit, he kept a most laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in constant employment, whose works he passed upon the publick for his own, when he did not immedi-

ately direct them against himself.

To this learned person, therefore, he went upon the prefent occasion; and having him called from a night cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politicks to a company of chairmen, he told him his bufinefs, and defired him to fet about it directly. 'Good God, Sir (said the ' author) this is a very unseasonable time to set " me upon fuch a work. From five this morning, till eleven at night, have I laboured incessantly; and now, when I have just stepped out to take a 'little necessary refreshment' - 'Refreshment! (answered my master.) Tell me not of refreshment, or any thing else! Either do my business, or fay you will not! I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for less than I give you.". -That is impossible (replied the author) if they are to live by it! I am fure what you give "me scarce keeps me from starving!"--- Starving! (returned my master.) So it appears, indeed! when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and smell fo strong of spirituous liquors, that it is offensive to sobriety tofland near you. I wonder you are not ashamed to be guilty of fuch intemperance, it ill becomes a man of morality and religion.' -- Sir, Sir! (interrupted the author, provoked beyond his patience.) Have some regard to truth and reason 'in what you fay; and look at home, before you accuse me of intemperance! I laboured the " whole

whole day, without any other refreshment, or fustenance, than a mouthful of bread and cheefe, and a draught of small beer; and now have had only a quartern of gin in a pint of warm porter, to wash down half a pound of sausages, and ' you call this intemperance. If I may judge by · appearances, you have not fpent your evening on fuch fare.'- How I have fpent my evening returned my master, who, in spite of himself, felt the justice of the reproach) is nothing to the purpose! I am answerable for what I do! But this manner of talking fignifies nothing! I must have this Exhortation by eight in the morning! It will not take you up much time! You are · fufficiently practifed in the style: the matter is of little consequence! If you choose to drink a glass of wine, here is half a crown, which I inake you a present of! I would by no means have you stinted of any thing that is proper.' --- ' Sir (answered the author) I am " much obliged to you! I will take care that it ' shall be ready at the time. You are fensible that I never think much of any labour to ferve · you. I have, finished all the pamphlets you ordered, about the ballad-finger's affair! Here -they are! This is a letter from you to him, "that lays him flat! I have quoted half the fathers of the church against him !--- These two are letters to you, upon the subject; one as from a great lord, the other from a reverend divine, fetting forth the great benefits of your · ministry, and exposing the profaneness and im-"morality of his ballad. - This here is a filly vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the author, from one of his ranting companions; and

this last is an address to the publick against all those irreligious and profane amusements of bal-· lads, balls, routs, &c. This is a master-piece! You fee it is as from myself, if you do not choose to own it; though I do not know but it may have more weight with your enemies if it appears as from another. So you fee I have worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have done with Mr. Momus and his ballad."— Why aye! pretty well, I believe (faid my master)-But hold, I have a thought just come into my head! You must know that the Parson of the parish has sent for that reprobate, that Momus, and ordered him to alter the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have feveral of the same notes with the Pfalm tunes! Now, as this is known, what do you think of writing a letter to me, as from the Parson, setting forth what he has done, and infinuating that it was the direction of the 'Squire? This will clinch the affair! After such an authority no one will dare to fay a word in its behalf: besides, it will have a good look to be taken notice of by fuch people.'- That is true (answered the author) it will be so, and the Par-' fon's notice shall not be thrown away! I'll do it to-morrow morning, as foon as I fend you the Exhortation.' My master then wished him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himself went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had scarce slept off his debauch, when he was called to chaunt his mattin song; after which he did not fail to display the wound in his temple, the occasion of which he promised to unfold to his congregation in the evening. This he did to raise a curiosity that should gather his whole slock, to

4

hear so extraordinary an affair, as he designed to propose a subscription, when their passions should be warmed by such an horrid attempt upon their

paftor.

By the time he had finished this first work of the day, the Exhortation was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfashionably early as it was for a person of her rank to be even up) dressed, and waiting for him. Please your Grace (said he) here is the Exhortation your Grace defired of me, and I pray Heaven it may prove successful! I am afraid I have made your Grace wait, but I came the moment I had finished the first duties of the morning. If your Grace pleases, I will do myfelf the honour to accompany your Grace! Perhaps my personal Exhortation and prayer may have more effect! My Ministry has often been bleffed with aftonishing success.'- 'I am sensible of that, Doctor (answered her Grace) but this unhappy man is of such a strange temper, that I apprehend he might be guilty of some act of rashness, that might be dangerous to your perfon, if you were to go to him without his confent; and that I am much afraid I shall hardly obtain. No longer ago than yesterday, near as the dreadful hour of his execution approaches, did I find him engaged at cards with his gaoler; and when I expostulated with him on the danger of trifling away his few remaining moments in fo idle a manner (for I was apprehensive of exasperating him if I spoke with greater severity) he only smiled, and answered me with a passage out of some play.'- Yes, please your Grace (replied my mafter with a lifted eye, and a deepfetched groan) cards and plays are the bane

of half the world: religion is quite neglected for them. The great work of reformation will never be completed till they are utterly abolificed. As your Grace does not think it meet that I should visit this unfortunate gentleman in perfon, I am obedient to your Grace's pleasure; however, I will offer up my prayers for him; and my spirit shall assist your Grace's pious endeavours! Not that I fear what man can do unto me: the angel of the Lord watcheth over

me, or the stroke that made this wound had given me rest from my labours.

He then displayed the mark of Mother Brimfone's rage, and told her Grace somoving and circumstantial a story of his having been waylaid, and
attacked by some of Momus's riotous companions,
that she implicitly believed him, and sympathised
in his sufferings. He then gave her the Exhortation which she was to deliver to her unfortunate
cousin; and seeing her uneasy at being obliged to
wait till the bank should be open, to get money to
distribute among the poor wretches in the prison,
he accommodated her Grace with change for a
twenty pound note, having (as he told her Grace)
just so much about him, which he was carrying to
relieve a poor industrious family in great distress.

It was a great pleasure to me that I changed my service upon this occasion, as I was heartily sick of my master; though, from a view I took of his heart, I saw that I had not been witness to

half the mystery of his iniquity.

My new mistress went directly to the prison, to her cousin, where she had a sufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity among his unhappy sellow-prisoners, while she waited for his rising, which was not till very late, as he had fat up the E 5 whole

whole night before, at his beloved diversion of card-playing. When at length the got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble she had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He asked her if she had procured him a pardon; and when the answered in the negative, and affured him that all fuch hopes were vain, he then told her that he would dispense with the continuance of her visit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, scarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the Exhortation of my late master, which she with difficulty perfuaded him to take, though, from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My mistres, for I had the good fortune to remain in her possession, was so shocked at this insensibility, that she went directly home, and sought relief from the solid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart in unseigned prayer for the conversion of him, and every other object of the divine displeasure; for though a misguided fervency of devotion had made her, in some measure, a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late master, nothing could lead her from the purest paths of true piety and virtue; nor did she suffer the extravagance of his pretended enthusiasm so far to blind her better judgement, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by persons of her

fex and rank.

CHAP. XIII.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a rout. CHRYSAL changes his service for that of a lady of enterprise. A bold stroke for a husband.

CHE, accordingly, went that afternoon to the I house of a lady of quality, where a great concourse of the best company usually assembled on fet invitations, to fpend the evening at the favourite amusement of cards. The lady of the house was one of those children of fortune, who rise by the means that ruin thousands. In her early youth she had facrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the loofe defires of the nobleman flie was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaifant blindness to his other amours, gained her fuch an ascendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondness he made her his wife. But the method he took to fecure himself the ease and conveniencies he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaifance were all feigned; and, the necessity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, the immediately affumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the usual prerogatives of it in as high a manner as if the had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated husband soon saw his error; but it was toolate to remedy it; he therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he defires, by submitting to let her gratify her passion for vain. pamp

pomp and expensive ceremony, under the parade of which she strives to hide her obscure original, as she attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue by a most rigid profession of religion. Thus, her routs are the most splendid, and difficult of access, of any in the town, no person being invited but those of the first rank, nor any who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and she professes herself a strict sollower of my late master, in his most extravagant opinions, where they do not imme-

diately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impossible to convey any notion to you of fuch a scene as this, to which my mistress carried me, it is so different from that sphere in which you have acted. Suppose you see several hundred people of both fexes, and of every age, dreffed in all the profusion and elegance of expense, and wearing diffipation and happiness in their looks, affembled together to spend the evening in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverse, and you shall behold a fet of people who have sacrificed their real interest, and the peace of their minds, to the gratification of this, and such-like pleasure, and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly, the whole is one continued scene of sharping, mutual distrust, envy, slander, and malevolence; the very few, who like my mistress come there for mere amusement, and are untainted with such vices, being forced to submit in seeming acquiescence to the torrent they are not able to stem.

In the course of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my service; but as the stay I made with my momentary possessors was so very short.

short, I shall wave giving any account of them, especially as the two most remarkable of the set, and under whom all the rest who launch out of the common road of life are in a great measure characterised, have been sufficiently described on a former occasion, though the histories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment, and hasten to the lady in whose possession I left the company.

My new mistress was the young widow of a person of great distinction, who in the decline of life had over-looked the disparity of age and rank, and married her, solely to gratify his passion for her beauty. During the sew years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiscretion within bounds, but as soon as that guard was removed, she plunged into all the sashionable sollies of the

times, with a keenness that courted ruin.

But, though she eagerly followed every pursuit that bore the name of pleasure, vanity was the ruling passion of her heart. The rank into which her husband had lifted her placed her upon a level, in point of society, with the best company, and the fortune he left her was sufficient to support that rank. But still, as there were many degrees above her, her heart pined for precedency, and she could not enjoy the honours she had, while she was obliged to give place to so many.

She had formed a variety of schemes to obtain this desired object, but still without success. At length, the very night I came into her possession, an accident suggested one to her, which she immediately put into execution, with the most sanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the first rank in the company, the weakness of

whose

whose reason had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a person to whose side-lity they thought they could entrust so important a charge. As private missortunes are always an agreeable topick for publick conversation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company with several melancholy instances of his weakness. My mistress regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till some time after, the nobleman happening to fix his eye with some earnestness upon her, a sudden thought datted into her mind, that, if she could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratisfied at once.

The moment this thought took possession of her head, it drove out every other. She loft deal! She revoked! She miffed reckoning her honours! In short, she was so absent, that she was obliged to pretend a violent head-ach, and leave the company. As foon as the got home the went to bed, where the spent the night in forming numberless projects for accomplishing her defign; but still the account which the old lady had given of the vigilance of the person to whose care the nobleman was entrusted disconcerted them all. At length fhe refolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as the could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greatest honesty was not proof against a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too rash, nor betray her design before she had some prospect of success, she refolved to found the person, before she applied directly to him. Accordingly,

Accordingly, as soon as she got up, she wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a person had a certain affair to propose to him, for his concurrence, in which he should receive immediately a thousand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a year, beside several other considerable advantages; and that what he was desired to do could be effected without any possible loss, or danger, to himself. This letter she sent by the penny-post, and desired the answer might be returned in the same manner, under a feigned direction, to the house of a person in whom she consided.

Such a letter necessarily surprised the gentleman to whom it was sent. Though the greatness of the offer convinced him that some extraordinary piece of villainy was designed, yet, as he knew himself above temptation, he resolved to humour the scheme, till he should discover the whole of it, for the honest revenge of punishing a base attempt to seduce him into dishonesty. Accordingly, he answered the letter directly in such terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expressing his readiness to embrace any proposal that should be so advantageous, when he should be satisfied that the person who made it was able to person it, and worthy of his considence.

This bait took, as he desired. My mistress, whose eager imagination was too full of the desired object to let her use any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which she signed her name, and in it explained her whole scheme of marrying the nobleman by his assistance, enforcing her former offer, by a promise of continuing him in

the agency of the estate, or, rather indeed, of sharing it with him, and defiring to meet him that evening, either at her house, or any other place he pleased, to confer upon proper means for bring-

ing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loss how to act on such an occasion; he immediately waited upon the nobleman who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and, showing both the letters, defired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was fruck with horrour at a piece of villainy that did fuch dishonour to the fex, respect for the memory of the worthy man whose name she bore would not permit him to expose her to publick infult; however, to prevent her making the like attempt elfewhere, he refolved to shock her, by a personal detection: accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be feen going to her house, but that, if she pleased, he would meet her, at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where she should enquire for him, by the name of Mr. Trueman. Such a prospect of immediate fuccess made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and, accordingly, she prepared to attend the appointment, with the most sanguine expectation.

But his Lordship had prepared a reception for her which she never suspected. A little before the time he went to the tavern, with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a closet large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word, that, if any lady should enquire for Mr. Trueman, she should be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged,

her

her impatience brought her rather before the time, when her imagined confederate showing her up into the room, and placing her so that every word she said might be heard in the closet, he entered into a conversation with her, on the subject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole proposal, and by starting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument

in her power.

As foon as his Lordship thought she had faid enough, he issued from his concealment, and, looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care she was taking to preserve the noble family of his relation, which she had whimsically given as one of the reasons of her defiring this marriage. It is impossible to describe her situation at the fight of this nobleman, whom she well knew, as well as his interest in defeating her defign. Astonishment, shame, and confusion, struck her motionless and dumb. She was just able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a fwoon upon the floor. Such diffress naturally foftened the refentment of the generous nobleman to whom the had defigned fuch an injury: he affisted to raise her from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herfelf, instead of aggravating her diffress by reproaches, mildly advised her to desist from such unjustifiable schemes, and promised her, that he would take no notice of what had happened, if he found that her future conduct merited fuch tenderness.

This treatment had the wished effect. That false spirit, which would have bor'n her up against any severity, sunk before such unexpected delicacy and compassion. She melted into a flood of tears; and, unable too utter a word, fell upon her knees,

and

and kissed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expressed; who immediately raised her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagined it must be disagreeable to her to stay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himself, with the utmost politeness and

respect.

Her situation, when she got home, was truely pitiable. The assurance of her late hopes doubled the distress of her disappointment, and the fear of shame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She cursed her own folly, the persidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithless man; and, in the agony of her grief, resolved to leave this detested town next morning, and bury hersfelf for ever from the world, in her country-seat.

This resolution she held in till next morning, when she actually set out for the country; but I have reason to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently feen her fince in all publick places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me, I was given to her coachman, to pay the farrier who took care of her horses; but he thought it more necessary to give me, in payment of a debt of his own, to a man who kept a beerhouse, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him against a profecution for entertaining a gang of ftreet-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the course of business, to a knight of the post, whose evidence was to acquit the the publican. From this conscientious person, as he was on his way to a country-affises, where the lives of many depended on his goodnature, I was taken by a highwayman, who

lost me that evening to a nobleman, at a horse-

C H A P. XIV.

CHRYSAL, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of the industry, who brings him to a horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practise part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences.

N the three or four last changes of my service there was nothing remarkable. The progression was natural, and the events common: but I must own, I was a good deal surprised at several occurrences in my present station, which were, in the proper course of things, so strange and unaccountable, that the most whimfical devil could never have thought of them, without information.

The gentleman who had acquired me so easily on the road, and brought me to the meeting, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his skill in the mysterious science of chance, supported by a good stock of assurance and personal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which design he had really so far succeeded, that he had lived for several years in the highest life, and maintained the appearance of the estate he talked of in his own country, by the sole force of his genius, the sertility of which was not confined to one resource; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was al-

ways ready to redress the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his possession.

The roads had been bad that morning, which kept him a little later than usual, so that the company were at the post when he joined them. By their noise and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a croud of their own fervants; their dress being exactly the undress uniform of that party-coloured tribe; and every voice being exerted with the fame vehemence, and in the like style of oaths and imprecations, with which those gentry receive them, at the door of a play-house or palace; so that I scarce knew how to believe my fenses, when I recognifed the faces of feveral persons of the most elevated station, and, particularly, most of those among whom I had spent the evening I described to you at the club, on my first coming to this part of the world.

As foon as the bets were made, and the noise began to subside a little, my master pressed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockies, and came up to the post just as they were preparing to start, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my lord' (said he.) 'Well, Jack, ' (replied the other) where have you been all 'day?' This was all the discourse they had time for, the horses going off that moment: but, on the strength of this my master backed his lordship deeply.

It is impossible to describe to you, who have never seen any thing of the kind, a scene of such confusion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving against each other,

without

without any respect to rank, or regard to safety, and roaring out their bets, and shouting for joy, at every vicissitude in the running. At length the heat was ended, but so contrary to my master's expectation, that he lost to a noble duke who was in the secret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large sum, besides,

more than he was able to pay him.

This was a fevere stroke. He rode directly up to the post, and addressing the same groom, just as he came out of the scales; 'Sblood, my lord, (faid he) how could you fling me fo! I am quite broke up: his Grace has touched me for five hundred; and the devil of the thing is, that I have been fo torn down by a bad run of late, that I am quite out of cash, and have not a shil-· ling to pay him.'--- How could this be? (resplied the groom) did I not give you the word? But you are fuch a careless son of a bitch.'-• The word with a vengeance (answered my mafter) you returned my well, but I have found it very ill.'- Aye, I gueffed it was fo (added the groom) you were ignorant that we were · smoaked, and found it necessary to change the · lay. Where the devil were you all this morning? Taking a ride, I suppose. You will never leave off, till these rides bring you a ride in a cart to Tyburn. But, keep out of his Grace's way till the horses start, and we will bring you bome, I will engage. He thinks he has all the fecret, but he is mistaken this bout, and shall pay for his enterance before we admit him to be one of us.'-This discourse passed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to rub, and fettle the next heat.

You are surprised at this familiarity between my master and the groom. When he first addressed him by the title of, My lord, I own I thought it no more than a cant, which, in the freedom of this intercourse, where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my aftonishment at a nearer view, to see that he really was the thing he was called; and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every, the meanest art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding against him, to take the place of their fervants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment; ennobling, by this condescension, the most abject and vile offices with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their ancestors. Strange ambition, at a time when the interest and glory of their country called for their affistance!

As foon as the noble groom and my mafter were alone, Now, Jack, what think you of my little stun-orse? (says his Lordship.) You must know that I have measured the foot of them all in this heat, and find that I have the beels by a distance at least; but the weights are above my trim. However, we have a remedy for that: look at this cap (taking one out of a cheft, in which his running drefs had been brought to the ground) this is a leaden skull, and weighs above two stun; put this on your ' head, the thickness of your own skull will prevent its giving you the head-ach: aye, it fits you very well. Now, I will wear this to the post, and, just before we start, complain that my cap is too wide, and borrow your's to ride in; and then when I alight at the scales, after the heat is over, I will pull off your's, as if to wipe

wipe my face, and give it you to hold, who can return me this, to weigh in, and as I wear the same trusses, stuffed with handkerchiefs, in which I carried the weight last heat, they will never suspect us.—Ha, Jack, what say you to this! match me this, among all your Hiber-inan tricks, if you can. Go your way! double

with his Grace, and lay all you can, I'll go with you; but be fure to meet me at the post be-

fore, and at the scales after the heat, and not to blow the business, by being in too great a

hurry.'

I fee you wonder how his Lordship should put fuch confidence in my master, as he seemed to know him fo well; but the truth was, my mafter's character for courage was so well established, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at least, if not unsuspected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried: and this made the other think him the fafest person to entrust with the execution of such a scheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or prevent his reaching it to his lordship. The finesse succeeded; his lordthip beat every tail hollow; and my mafter not only cleared with his Grace, but also won confiderably for himself, and his confederate belides. Things were carried on in the same genteel manner for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vast concourse of the best company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the sport very fine, and so fair that the knowing ones were all taken in; and, to make the pleasure complete, though the croud was fo great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one

of whom was bor'n down in the croffing by the superior strength of a servant, who rode against him, and slipped his shoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horse's falling in

the running.

It was on a sporting bet, on one of the by matches, that I was lost that evening, to the nobleman, as I said, in whose possession I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning after my new master's return to London he went to pay his court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country-seats.

CHAP. XV.

Chrysal's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, Chrysal comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notions of some affairs.

SOME publick occasion had brought a concourse more than usual in those retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked him, what had kept him so late; on which, with an easy air of pleasantry, he answered aloud, that 'He had been detained by a very whimsical affair: a certain nobleman (said

(faid he) went into company last night so im-" mensely drunk, that having set in to play, and lost five thousand pounds, he quite forgot it this ' morning, and refused to pay the money, till fome person of honour, who was unconcerned in the matter, should vouch his having lost it fairly; on which it was referred to me, and forry 'I am, that I was qualified to give it against ' him.'-- ' How, my lord, by being a person ' of honour!' (fays the gentleman he spoke to.) -'No (replied my master, with a fignificant ' fmile) not so neither, but by being unconcerned in winning it.'—And then, turning fhort to another, 'But have you heard the news, my lord? (faid he.) Mr. ——— caught his wife yesterday ' taking a ferious walk in Kenfington-gardens, with the gentleman whom we all know he forbade her keeping company with fome time ago.' — A fmile of general approbation encouraged him so much, that he concluded with faying, 'He ' wished he had himself been the happy delinquent fo taken, as he doubted not but the gravest ' bishop on the bench would, were he to speak ' his mind honestly.' The Prince had heard him without interrup-

The Prince had heard him without interruption; but as foon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman who stood near him, 'There can be no greater insult (said he, with a determined look and solemn accent) to a person who is appointed to put the laws of a country in execution, than for any one to boast of a breach of those in his presence. For my part, if I am ever called by Providence to that station, it is my invariable resolution, that no man, how exalted soever in rank, who lives in open violation of any law, human or divine, shall ever hold Vol. II.

'employment under me, or receive countenance from me.'

This rebuke damped my master's spirits, as it struck a reverential awe into all present. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abashed. But he soon recovered; and to silence the jests of his companions, and show that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to spend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was sent, in the change of a note, to the first minister of state.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politicks made me enter into this fervice with reluctance; but my prejudice was foon remov-My new master was just coming from his closet when I was delivered to him: he stopped to count the money, then putting it into his purfe, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand --- 'I · must have all these finished against morning ' (faid he) that I may be able to read them over, before they are figned. I know they are a great many, but the business requires despatch; and diligence and method overcome the greateft difficulties.' - Saying this, he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with feveral of the most eminent members of the community, who came, fome to confult, fome to advise (for he refused not the advice of the meanest) and all to congratulate him on the fuccess of his meafures. - When the business and formality of this fcene

fcene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who defired some private converfation with my master. As soon as they were alone, 'I have done myself the honour to wait 'upon you this morning (said the gentleman) to 'inform you, that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know whom you would have me 'return; for, as I see that all your measures are 'evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am determined to support you.'

'I am much obliged to your good opinion (answered my master;) but I am resolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any person by any other means than reason: all, therefore, that I have to ask is, that you will return an honest man; while he approves of my conduct he will certainly support me, and

ono longer do I wish to be supported.'

'What, Sir! (replied the gentleman in aftonish-"ment) not defire to have your friends returned! Why, Sir, is it possible that you can be a stran-' ger to the intrigues that are forming against you, by a faction, who, when they had reduced the fate to a mere wreck, like a cowardly, mutinous ' crew, flew in the face of their mafter, took the boat, and made their escape to shore; and now, ' when you have not only brought her fafe into ' harbour, but also fitted her out for another ' voyage, with every prospect of success, are ca-' balling to undermine, and turn you away from ' the helm: not that they even pretend to arraign 'your conduct or skill, but just that they may have the pillaging the fruits of your labours. As ' this, Sir, is notoriously the case, you must excuse the warmth of my honest zeal when I tell

you, that I think you must be guilty of very frange, very blameable remissiness, if you ne-

e glect any possible method of disappointing their

• pernicious designs.'-

My friend (returned my master) I am too fensible of the truth of all you say, but hope there is no necessity for my having recourse to methods which my soul disapproves. Without the assistance of any such did I (to pursue your mode of speech) first point out to our master, and the rest of the ship's company, the errors in their steering, the rocks they were ready to run upon, and the way to avoid them. Without any such did I take the helm in that dangerous time, when they sled from the wreck, and worked her out of the breakers they lest her among; and without any such will I support my place at the helm, or resign it; for, in my

opinion, no end can justify improper means. · Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer gives me pain? Do not mistake me: I am · fincerely obliged to you for that good opinion which dictated it to your honest heart; but the truth is, that any member of the community's having the power of making fuch an offer proves such a degeneracy in our constitution, as threatens its overthrow in the end. A par-· liament should be a representation of the people; but how can it be faid to be that, if the people are not at liberty to choose whom they please to represent them? Besides, such a manner of nominating disappoints the end, as well as it destroys the essence of a parliament; as it is too probable that the nominator shall stipulate conditions with his member, that may not only take away the power of his voting according to the

dictates

dictates of his judgement and conscience, but ' also enjoin such as may be directly opposite to both, and injurious, if not destructive, to that country, which he thus nominally represents. A parliament, therefore, to be free, should be freely chosen, no man having it in his power to do more than give his own vote; and fuch a par-' liament, to keep up to the excellence of its nature in its first institution, should not continue longer than one session, but a new one be called as often as the occasions of the state should require it, once in every year at least, for so often does the interest of a nation demand that its guardians should meet. Such a parliament, fenfible of the shortness of the duration, and nature of the tenure of their power, would take care never to all against the interest of their constituents; or, if human frailty should err, their time would be too short to establish the evil, and, as it would be impossible for them to be chosen again, the next parliament would remedy ' the mischief .- Such should a British parliament be! Such I hope it will be! It is every honest Briton's duty to hope fo! and not only that, but to endeavour to make it so Nor shall any ' act of mine ever seem to countenance a practice that contradicts this principle. By speaking and acting in strict conformity to the dictates of my ' judgement and conscience, have I hitherto succeeded, contrary to the apprehensions of many, beyond the expectations of all; and the fame means, and none other, will I ever purfue.'-Heaven bless your pious intentions!' (faid the

gentleman, taking his hand, and kiffing it in a rapture, tears of joy running down his face.) 'Heaven will bless them. Happy sovereign in such a fervant!

fervant! Happy Britain in such a guardian!'— Saying this, he took his leave of my master, who went directly to wait upon his.

C H A P. XVI.

CHRYSAL's fentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. CHRYSAL enters into the service of the general. Conslict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.

HE first view of this august person struck me with a reverence which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man; but we fee through all difguife, and read the real character, in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened the royal in his breaft.- 'Sire!' (faid my mafter, addressing him with the most respectful fincerity) ' here are the despatches which you ordered me to draw up yesterday. Since I had the honour of your commands then, I have received fome further intelligence, that confirms the justice of your resolutions. Disappointed, but not deterred by the repulse which they justly met with from you, those people have the con-· fidence to make a new attempt, and think to

6 obtain

obtain by menaces what was refused to their intreaties; but the event will convince them, that it is more difficult to a generous mind to deny the suppliant, than repulse the infolent. Strong in the natural strength of your dominions, and ftronger in the love of your people, you are able to affert your own cause against all the powers of the world, on that element which ature has pointed out for the scene of your triumphs; nor will you permit any other to interfere with you on it. All you require is a e neutrality, where you are intitled to affistance. This shows your confidence in your own ftrength, and your contempt of them. even this contempt will not overlook any difrespect to yourself, any partiality to your enee mies. Let them either behave themselves as friends, or profess themselves foes. ——This choice is indifferent to you. As to their come plaints, their own unjust actions are the cause of them; and, when this is removed, they will cease of course. Till then, to seek a remission of the punishment, and still persist in the crime, is an infult upon justice and mercy; and for their menaces, they are beneath the notice of an answer.'

Be it fo,' (replied the reverend monarch, the indignation of his honest heart flashing from his eyes) be it so: you speak the sentiments of my foul.'—Then turning to a favoured subject, who stood near him, It is a pleasure to me to transact business with this man (continued he;) he makes me understand him, and does not perplex my soul with a vain maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with open honesty and boldness.'—The honour of this

testimony warmed the heart of my master with a joy that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the affiduity of his foul. As foon as he went home, he found a person waiting for him, whom he had appointed to meet him, on an affair of the greatest importance. - I have fent for vou, my friend (faid my mafter) on an occasion, which, I am sensible, will give joy to vour heart. You are to command a separate · body of the troops, which have been fent to pro-· fecute this necessary and just war in America. · I need not put myfelf, nor you, to the pain of repeating the causes of the shameful inactivity, · to give it no severer name, by which this war has been drawn into fuch a length: you know, and will avoid them. You will not wear out op-· portunity, in making unnecessary preparations · for improbable occasions; you will not damp the ardour of your foldiers by delay, nor prolong a burthensome war, to enrich yourself with the fpoils of your country. You are young, active, and brave: fuch a commander only do British · foldiers want, to lead them to victory. You have no fenior, no superior here, to restrain the · efforts of your spirit by timid caution; at the · fame time that your judgement will supply the · place of experience, and prevent your falling into the misfortunes which felf-fusficient, brutal rashness has made so fatal to others. instructions are comprised in a few words-Make the best use your judgement shall direct you of the forces entrusted to your command, to de-· fend the property, and avenge the wrongs of your fellow-subjects; and to vindicate the hoonour of this abused nation. - I know whom I fpeak to, and therefore I say no more. Proceed,

my friend, my foldier; answer my expectations, and you will fulfil the wishes of your country. Saying thus, he embraced him tenderly; and as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the street, he saw a number of difabled foldiers, who had placed themselves before his window, to follicit relief for their miferies. O, my friend! (continued he, grafp-' ing his hand) behold those victims of the un-' just ambition of that enemy against whom you ' go; and let the fight add the wings of an eagle to your haste, to tear down a power which has been thus fatal to fo many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from fuffering the like evils, from the same cause. The man who does not use, to the best advantage, the means entrusted to him by his country to destroy its enemies, is guilty of all the evils which those enemies may afterwards do to his country.—Shall I beg a favour of my friend? Distribute this money (giving him a handful of guineas) among those men, as from yourfelf. If it is not enough to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor for what is wanting; if it is more, keep the refidue in your hands, to apply to the same use on the first occasion you meet. This much will relieve their real wants, and more might only tempt them to excess. The invidiousness of my flation makes it improper for me to do even an act of virtue, which may be mistaken for oftentation. Adieu, my friend. Heaven guard you in the day of battle, and guide your fword to victory.

I here quitted the service of this great man; the instances of whose conduct, which I have

given, make any further character of him unne-

ceffary.

The regard with which the minister had addreffed himself to my present master raised my curiofity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but that I might leave his possession directly: but my fears were agreeably disappointed; for the number of guineas given to him by my mafter exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be distributed, it fell to my lot to remain

a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entrusted to him, warmed his heart with the most exalted joy. He executed his charitable commission, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee to his beloved mother, and kiffing her hand in rapture, O, madam! (faid he) congratulate your happy fon. My prayers at length are heard; and I am bleffed with an opportunity of proving to the world my attachment to the fervice, my ardour for the glory of my country. I am ho-' noured with a separate command in America, where Heaven fires my foul with an affurance, that I shall have the happiness of crushing the 'injurious power of our enemies in the very · place where it first attacked my country; where it has too long triumphed in its wrongs.'

' Heaven bless my son,' (replied the matron, as foon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permitted her to speak.) ' Heaven guard my fon, and blefs his pious hopes. Let me only live to fee him return with the honour of having done his duty, and I shall die contented. why do I fay this, as if my heart felt a doubt for him? My fon will never fail to do his duty; · he

he will never fall from the paths of honour, however dangerous, nor feek to colour over with fpecious arguments the loss of his honour. He will not make his mother ashamed of having bor'n him, nor bring her grey hairs with difgrace and forrow to the grave. I know the instructions which have formed his youth; I know the principles of his heart; I know my own blood better.—But, O my fon! remember also, that prudence distinguishes true courage from rashness; that your country has now a ' peculiar interest in your life; and that you betray its trust, if you lose it by any unnecessary boldness. Remember your aged mother, who hangs weeping over her grave till you return. · Remember your'

O, my mother, no more! Recal not ideas, which my present situation requires me to forget. · Fear not; your fon will not be a difgrace to the honest race from which he is sprung. He will do his duty as a foldier, a British foldier, and as a man fenfible of the obligations of reason and religion. Whether I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this hand again is only known to Heaven; but it is in my power to pro-' mise, that the name of your son shall never raise a blush in the face of his mother, nor his ' actions require the palliation of excuse from his friends. If life is to be short, let it be well filled: one day of glory is better than an age of idleness or dishonour. Adieu, my mother; your bleffing is a shield to the head, a support to the soul of your fon; one tender parting more, and then ' my heart must be resigned to other cares.'-Heaven bless! Heaven guard my son!' And then,

r 6 as

as he went from her, 'O Glory, what a tribute dost thou exact from wretched mortals!'

My master paused a moment to wipe away the pious tear which filial duty owed to such a parting, and then hasted to another scene of equal

tenderness.

Mutual merit had improved the instinctive liking of youth between my mafter and a young lady, whose elevated rank and large fortune were her least recommendations, into the strongest attachment of real love. As reason could make no obiection on either fide, parental approbation gave its fanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day that was to feal their blifs. Hard talk upon a favoured lover to communicate to the chosen of his foul the order which was to damp rifing expectation, by this delay; and tear him from the instant hope of that happiness which he had so long been suing for. But honour, and the service of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory to which his foul aspired,

CHAP. XVII.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned, romantick style. Chrysal quits the service of the general, and, after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.

S foon as he had recovered from the foftness into which his mother's tenderness had melted him, he went directly to his mistress. She received him with the freedom proper in their present fituation, but soon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that showed her his heart was not at ease. This alarmed her tender fears: 6 What (faid she, looking earnestly at him) can make a troubled gloom overcast that face. where hope and happiness have, for some time, brightened every smile! Can any thing have happened to diffurb the prospect so pleasing to us! Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy or unable to share with you! It must be so: that faint, that laboured smile betrays the ficknefs of your heart.'

'O dearest wish of that heart,' (replied he, taking her hand, and kissing it in extasy) 'how 'shall I merit such perfection! It is impossible: I am unworthy: but let my soul thank Heaven for blessing it with this opportunity of rising nearer to a level with your virtues; a hope that

will foften the feverity of absence, and make the

delay of happiness seem shorter.'

What canst thou mean (said she, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy)- Delay-I understand thee not-I urge not.'-- Mistake onot, O my love, the inconfistencies which anguish extorts from my bleeding heart.—How can I fay it!—Our happiness is delayed delayed but to be more exalted.—Honour, the · fervice of my country, call'-- And am I to · be left?' - But for a time, a little time, the pain of which shall be overpaid by the joy of · meeting never to part again. — O spare my heart, restrain those tears; I am not worthy, I am not proof to fuch a trial.—The interest, the glory of my country demand my fervice, and my · gracious mafter has honoured me with a station, in which my endeavours may be effectual to accomplish his commands—nay, must be effec-4 tual, where love urges duty, where you are the · inestimable reward.' -- 'If that reward is all s you feek, why do you fly from it? My fortune is · amply sufficient! Quit then the dangerous paths of s ambition, and let us retire, and feek true happiness in content.' O spare my struggling heart; what can, shall I do!—The tryal is too great for human fortitude! Affift me, glory! help, · O my country! support me through this conflict, and I shall triumph over every other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but to deferve s thee .- 'Go! go! and Heaven guide and guard · your steps!' (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears.) I shall no longer Aruggle with the facred impulse that leads you on to glory. -Then turning to him; 'But, remember how you · leave me!-Think what I feel till you return! -- What

-What must I be, should' - The horrour of this thought made her unable to fay more: he flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with her's, as her head reclined upon his bosom, in the tenderness of a chaste embrace, 'This is too " much (faid he;) this is too much!—I never can repay this excess of goodness.'-Then breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthuliasm. Heaven gives my foul (continued he) this foretafte of happiness, as an earnest of success: I go to certain victory: the prayers of angels must prevail.'- Saying these words, he rushed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier state: the thought of parting from her damping the ardour that had enabled him to give that proof of his resolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears to fuch a facrifice.

But glory and the interest of his country soon dissipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of such painful scenes of tenderness, resumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking with the most indefatigable assiduity. But I continued not in his possession to see the effects of these cares; such objects as I was designed for occurred too frequently, to the first of whom it fell to my lot to be given. I told you that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly established on the principles of virtue than there. To select any one instance would be injustice to the rest. All was uniformly great and good.

My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head to raise the trophies of the French in America. Though he was defitute

flitute of almost every comfort which nature really stands in need of, his first care, on the acquisition of fuch a treasure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he changed me for a quartern of that liquid fire; the taste of which was too pleafing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be fatisfied with fo little. Quartern followed quartern, till every fense was intoxicated, and he fell dead drunk on the floor, when his good-natured hoft had him kindly laid to fleep off his debauch on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellowinhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it himself.—The scenes I saw in this service were all of the fame kind, but I was foon relieved from the pain of them, my mafter giving me as a prefent to an officer of the customs that very night. -- By this faithful fleward of the publick, I was next morning given to thefactor to a gang of fmugglers, to be laid out for him in lace in Flanders, whither he was just going on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader I went as far as Harwich, where, while they waited for the tide, he lost me, at a game of cribbage, to a person who was going over with him.

My new master was honest Aminadab, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son. 'I wish (said the father)

that we were fafe at our journey's end; for, though I have planned matters fo well that I

think there can be no danger, the immense con-

fequence at stake must make me anxious.'--'I do not understand you (replied the son:) I thought this was but fuch a journey as I have often known you take, and that you were going on farther than Holland, on some business of her Grace's.'- She thinks fo indeed (re-' turned the father;) nor would I have her think otherwise as yet: but I do not design ever to see her face more. I am now, my fon, arrived at the height of my wishes, being possessed of wealth beyond my most fanguine hopes. For you must know, that having gained the confidence of this woman by many fervices, I at length fuggested it to her, that the best way for her to make the " most profit of the great wealth she had amassed, would be to fend it to Holland, by some trusty ' person, who should bring it over again from ' thence, to fave appearances, and subscribe it here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies ' given for the defense of Germany, now that her's, and the intrigues of fome other great persons, had baffled the schemes of economy which the managers had attempted in vain to establish, and obliged them to come into our own terms. She took the hint, for it was a most plausible one, and immediately insisted that I ' should negociate the affair for her, giving me one hundred thousand pounds for that purpose.

'This was what I wanted, and had been always scheming for, having ever remitted my ' money, as fast as I could make any, into Hol-' land, that I might be able to seise such an happy opportunity as this, at a moment's warning. - But you cannot think, father, of staying in

'HOLLAND. You will be immediately purfued thither.'-- In Holland, fool! no, nor in the

fmoke of Europe at all! I design to set out for

far enough out of her reach, or that of any Chri-

flian power, before the can suspect any thing of my flight. And it will heighten the pleasure of

' my fuccefs, to think, that, while I am failing to

a land of circumcifion, she will sit in anxious

expectation of my return.'

But, father, is it not injustice to deceive her confidence, and rob her of so great a sum of

money?

Injustice, fool! injustice to a Christian! Say fuch another word and I discard you, disclaim you for ever! Thy converse with these Gentiles

has debauched thy faith. What do we mix with

them; what do we serve them; what do we bear their abomination, their insults for, but

to make our own advantage of them? Fools!
vain presumptuous fools! to imagine that any

benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them; or

change the innate hatred of our fouls to a fect

that has been the cause of our dispersion and ruin. But, to silence thy weak scruples about

injustice with a word, have I not the authority

of our holy Scripture, the example of our great

• prophet Moses himself, for what I do, who bor-• rowed the wealth of the Egyptians, without a

defign of ever returning it, to pay the children

of Ifrael for the labours they had been put to

by their oppressors, and enrich them when they

fhould arrive at the land of promise?——And is not this my case? have I not laboured hourly

for this Gentile woman without payment?

Did not she join to defraud our people of a greater

d

e

r

f

)

greater fum than this, to which my mite was added too, under the pretence of procuring us ' a fettlement! and did she not refuse to return it, when the attempt failed of success! What ' then is this but a just retaliation? a fulfilling of our law, that fays, An eye for an eye, and a ' tooth for a tooth? And do I not want her wealth to make my fettlement happy, in the land of my ' forefathers?' — The fon had too high a reverence for the judgement of his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments fo conclusive. By this time the wind and tide ferved for us: we arrived in Holland without any thing remarkable, except I should take notice to you of the fordid hypocrify of my master as fuch, who, not to violate the customs of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his passage without expense.

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. Political Conversation between a DUTCHMAN and a JEW. They differ in opinion. AMINADAB leaves his friend VAN HOGAN in great distress.

A S foon as we arrived at the Hague, my master fet his fon to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himself, for a moment, to speak to one of the principal members of the States.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon business, 'My frind Aminadab, (said his mightiness) I am glad to fee you; I hope you have brought us good news; and that there is a stop put to

the insolence of those English pirates, who, in a

manner, block up our ports, and have almost

ruined our trade.

Really, my friend Van Hogan, (replied my ' mafter) I am forry that I cannot give you any · fatisfactory account of that affair. For fuch is the perverseness of people in power there at prefent, that they will not liften to any ar-' guments.'- Will they not take money?'-No, indeed; nor does the boldest of us all 'know how to offer it with fafety, it was re-· jected with such indignant rage the last time; though in truth the offer was a tempting one. · I have feen the day, and that not very long fince, when half the fum would have done wice as much. But matters are most strangely altered of late. They have got a manager, who neither drinks nor games, keeps running horses, nor whores, nor lives above his private fortune, and therefore has not fuch preffing demands for money, as used to make our negociators go on fo fmoothly with others for-

merly.'
Death! what shall we do? Is the whole court
corrupted by this example? are they all infected

with fuch a strange madness?

No, it is not gone so far as that yet; and it is to be hoped that the example of a sew will not be able to do so much; and that, when the novelty of this humour wears off a little, it will go out of fashion insensibly, and things return to their old course. This is supposing the worst, that the engines now at work to overturn this new set should miscarry.

· But

But what must we do in the mean time? We shall be ruined before that may happen. We must

declare war, and do our selves justice.'

But may not the remedy there be worse than the disease? Are your affairs in such a condition as to entitle you to take fuch a step? Confider what a mighty naval force they have at this time! Consider how you will be able to " refift it."

'That is the thing, the only thing, that has kept us quiet so long! But something must be done; another ' Amboyna affair, or some such stroke, must bring

" us fatisfaction, and revenge too.

· Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do: this is no time for fuch strokes; nor are the present governours such people as those who ' fuffered them fo tamely: they will be apt to re-' turn the stroke, in a manner that may be attended with confequences too dreadful to be hasarded. I hate those haughty Islanders as much as you; except some few particulars, the sense of the whole nation has ever been against us; nor ' would they fuffer us among them now, but that we have availed ourselves so well of the favour of ' those few, as to get the command of almost all ' the money in the kingdom into our own hands, fo that now they dare not provoke us too far; though I own, I do suspect that the design of the present rulers is to get out of our power as soon as this war is over, if our old friends do not counteract their defigns.'

But all this time this talking signifies nothing to our affairs; what do they say to them? What reafons do they give for encouraging these outrages, in

· In

breach of treaties, and contempt of justice?

In truth, my friend, a great many, that are more just than agreeable; more easily exclaimed against than refuted. In answer to your ale ledging the faith of treaties, they infift, that they strictly observe the sense and spirit of them, while you only cavil about the words, it being absurd to think, that any nation should bind up its own hands in the manner you pretend; or, even if that was the meaning of the treaty, at the time when it was made, that your abuse of the indulgence given by it makes it necessary to retract it now: and they express the most indig-' nant surprise at your infisting so strongly upon one article, which, at best, is but doubtful, and would be in itself absurd, in the sense you wrest it to, while you break through fo many, the e meaning of which you do not even pretend to dispute.

. Then we will dispute no longer about them; we will enforce their observation by the same methods

' that originally obtained them.' --- 'Aye, if that could be; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you;

· I am afraid those means are out of your power; ' you were then really mighty states, respectable

for your power, and dreadful for your valour:

but the case is now altered—I need not say

how.'

· Ungrateful ENGLISH! to forget how we rescued them from popery and flavery, but the other day; · had it not been for us, they would, at best, have

been but flaves to FRANCE.

The very charge they make against you, who, they fay, could never have refifted the opower of Spain, or established your liberties, ' if their queen Elisabeth had not hearkened to the cries of your poor, distressed states. As for • the

re

ed

1-

at

n,

ng

1p

or,

at

of

to

g-

on

nd

eft

he

to

we

ods

nat

u;

r;

ole

r:

ay

red

ry;

300

u,

he

es,

to

he

the affair you mention, though they do not deny the benefit, they take off from the obligation, by attributing it to felf-interested motives, as, they say, you were convinced that, if any thing happened to them, you must sink of course; besides, that you have been amply paid for this, by the immense expense of blood and treasure with which they established your barrier in the late wars, which they evidently entered into on your accounts, to the neglect of their own interest.

'In a word, my friend, there is so much truth in what they say, that I would not advise you to insist upon these points any more.'—'Confound the points! and the memories that rip them up so! What shall we do? I myself lost a ship last week, worth sifty thousand ducats; though all the precautions possible were taken, as sending her papers by another ship, supplying her with false bills of lading, salse clearances, salse consignments; in short, every thing that human art could devise.'

'And I know the was as well fworn for to prevent her being condemned, as human confcience could fwear; but nothing could elude the captors, or deceive or influence the judges; but was the not infured?'

'Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by infur-'ing, except the ships are to be cast away. O my 'ship! my ship! I will have war.'—— And then 'all your ships go at once.'—— I am distracted! 'what shall we do?'

'My friend, the best, the only advice I can give you, is to put a stop to this trade, and open your eyes to your true interest. I hate the English as much as you possibly can; but that

that should not make me ruin myself to be revenged on them: they are your only natural allies; they first delivered, they still sustain you, onor can you support the very name of an indee pendent state without them. Provoke them not, therefore, too far; I wonder how they have bor'n ' fo much already; preserve a fair neutrality; they despise your assistance, and desire no more: nor, by your avarice, force them to measures that must end in your ruin. If you break with them, whom will you apply to? The French have given you many proofs, that they only wait for an opportu-· nity to enflave you: Spain has at length learned its own interest, and will not break with the only opower whose friendship can be of real service ' to it: and this very war gives a sufficient de-" monstration of Austrian faith and gratitude.

'This is the obvious fituation of things, and must strike a person at the first view: but a · moment's thought will show them even in a ftronger light. For, to grant that France and · Austria both may be fincere in their professions ' to you; does not reason show you the imprudence of trufting to promises, which it is more than probable they will not be able to perform? · For, if you would but divest yourself of passion and prejudice for a moment, you will fee that the measures entered upon, and the means used ' to carry them on, by the English, at this time, must, in all human appearance, disappoint the · fchemes of their enemies, and retort, upon their own heads, the ruin they meditated for others. Indeed, the prospect is such, that it is impossible to fay where things will end: every interior fund is exhausted; every external resource cut off; their own trade is absolutely ruined; the 6 treatreasures of Spain, which supplied them in their last wars, are no longer at their command; so that I can foresee nothing less than their becoming bankrupts, not only to themselves, but also to every foreign state and individual, whose avarice of present gain has made them supply their wants.

Nor is this diffress the effect of chance, or of an unfortunate campaign, which the success of another, or some lucky hit, may restore: It is the natural consequence of a system of measures, planned with judgement, and profecuted with vi-' gour, by a minister who will not fail to improve it to the most solid advantage. And this I say, onot folely from my own opinion. You know I have had connexions with persons able to give " me the best information, by the affistance of which I have traced the progress of these affairs with aftonishment: and therefore, as England has thus at length shown a superiority in council, theusual refource of patching up a good peace at the end of an unsuccessful war, seems also to be precluded from them.

As for the house of Austria, it has ever been a dead weight upon its friends; though its infatuated ingratitude to England, which has been in a manner its sole support for near a century, will, probably, prevent any other state from undertaking such a burthen, so that it must sink back into its original obscurity and barbarism.

Thus, you see, my friend, that depending upon France is leaning on a broken reed; and trusting to Austria, going for shelter under a falling wall. What, then, can you do, if the Vol. II.

• English should take offense at your behaviour, and exert that power which is in their hands, to

punish your avaricious partiality to their ene-

mies?

Your power is, in every instance, contemptible; your navy is gone absolutely to decay; your land-forces are filled with old men and children; your officers who might have served you, have been obliged to enter into other services for hread to make room for ignorant indelent nu

bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, pufillanimous burghers, who barter their votes for

fuch a share of the spoils of the publick. Your finances are in the lowest state of embarrassment; your publick spirit, your valour, your virtue, all

fwallowed up by felfishness, and fordid love of gain; every thing in the situation that seems

to invite ruin, if it is not speedily prevented,
and that can possibly be done no other way than
so I have mentioned, for as I have said, and

as I have mentioned; for, as I have faid, and must again repeat, things are now on a footing

there that you do not feem to be properly aware of. The people are sensible of their own strength;

governours exert it properly; and there is a mutual confidence between them, that in a manner en-

fures success to their attempts. Consider this

fair, this friendly representation of real facts, and you will soon see the improbability of their

bearing with you any longer; or suffering you to defeat the ends of their military efforts, by

carrying on the trade of their enemies, and fo

enabling them to continue the war.'

Is it come to this? Are the friends on whom we depended most turned against us? Are you an advocate for our enemies, and would persuade us to

give up the most advantageous branch of trade we

· have?

Why will you let your passion blind you thus? I have told you before, and I repeat it again, that of all Christians I hate the English most, because they resemble us least; as I love the Dutch most, as you come nearest to ourselves both in practice and profession. But my passions never blind me! and therefore I speak the dictates of reason. I plead not for them, nor will I slatter you.

Notwithstanding all their boasted power, we have one stroke left to humble them, and we will make it directly; we will draw all our money out of their

funds.

Will you so, at a third part loss? O, Moses! what sools are those Christians? Do you not see that even this stroke, as you call it, is guarded against? that, apprehensive of such an attempt, they have lowered the particular sunds, in which your money chiefly lies, so far, that the loss of selling out now would be intolerable? And whose is this money which you would draw out? The property of private people! Absurd thought! If it was the money of the publick, it would not be strange to see it secrificed to private interest; but there is no instance in all your story, of private property being given up voluntarily for the redress of publick wrongs.

Friend Hogan, I am in haste; my affairs call me elsewhere. When I shall see you again is uncertain; but my regard would not permit me to miss this opportunity of giving you my advice, which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your affairs in London; nor would I have another amuse you with hopes

that must deceive you in the end. While it was

' in my power to serve you, I did; I abused their

confidence, I betrayed their secrets to you: but

I can do it no longer, nor can any other to effect. Measures, as well as men; are changed.

· ___ Adieu.'

With these words my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend Van Hogan in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.

CHAP. XIX.

AMINADAB bids adieu to her Grace, and fails with his fon for AFRICA. CHRYSAL remains with a DUTCH banker. The principles and conscience of a good DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL is sent into GERMANY. His opinion of the DUTCH.

THE young Israelite met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that Aminadab blessed the God of his fathers; and to complete the fullness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his Dutch friends, and, in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not jewels of gold and jewels of silver, as much coined gold and silver as he could, and then going with his son to the sea-side, they embarked for their native

native country, in all the exultation of successful

villainy.

But I went not with them; my British shape being of more value in Europe than where he was going, my master left me with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of Spain, which neighbourhood made better known there.

My Hebrew master had scarce left the banker, into whose hands he had given me, when in came his Belgick friend Van Hogan, all aghast at the news he had received from him, and something else, which had come to his knowledge since.

O, Mynheer! (said he) we are all blown up and undone! The flood is pouring in upon us.'—— What is the matter now, Mynheer (replied the banker) that throws you into this strange consternation? The worms have not

destroyed the dams? nor an earthquake swal-

· lowed up the Spice-islands?"

Worse, worse, if possible, than even these! Those stubborn, proud, self-sufficient English have refused to release our ships that were taken carrying ammunition and provision to their enemies, so that we are like not only to lose those ships, but also the advantage of the trade for the future. What can be done to divert this blow? —— Really, Mynheer, I cannot tell; the case is bad enough, to be sure; but it is no more than was to be expected; it was not to be thought that they should always remain such passive sools as tamely to look on, while we supplied their enemies with necessaries to carry on the war against them, without endeavouring to put a stop to us.

Death! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus! but, say what you will, my PROVINCE shall never

bear it! Why, I have received advice this minute,

that all our ships, which were freighted for their enemies, will be condemned; and that they are as

· little moved at our menaces, as they were at our en-

treaties. If this continues, we shall not have a ship

· left in the TEXEL.'

' Nay, mine shall escape, I am resolved.'--- What will you do to save them?'-'Not run them into the danger, Mynheer.'——
'How, give up the trade!'——'Most certainly, fince it cannot be carried on with fafety any · longer, and glad that I have come off fo well.' -- 'I do not understand you!'-- You are too warm, Mynheer; too fanguine in the pursuit of ' your projects. While the surprise or fright of the late managers in England gave me reason to think that they would not venture to interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade in this way as any other: but, as foon as I faw the people recover their fenses, and the reins put into other hands, I made a timely retreat with what I had acquired.'--- 'And what do you intend to do " now?' --- ' Keep fair with those whom I can get nothing by breaking with, and throw my bufiness into another channel; by which management I have already succeeded so far, that I have got the British remittances to the parties engaged in the present war.'-- Why, there may be something in this; and, if one scheme fails, I believe I will even follow your example. --- 'And pray what is that, Mynheer?'--· No more than the old cry of piracy; but this is so

claid, that it can hardly fail of success: we have

· bribed

bribed the captain of an English privateer to rifle a hip that we prepare properly for the purpose, and

then to come into the way of one of our men of war,

which is to take him and bring him in, where he is to infult the government, and vindicate his outrages

on the pretence of authority.'

'And pray, Mynheer, what can you propose from all this, beside having the foolish villain

hanged?

Why the English, in detestation of such villainy, will give up the point of searching our ships, when they see their authority abused in such a manner, and so we shall gain our end that way; or, if they do not, our own people will be so enraged at the insult and injustice (as they will believe) of their proceeding, that they will immediately declare war against them; and so we shall obtain it the other. The pirate, when he has served our turn, we are to let escape; and it will be no great loss to the world, if half a score of his crew are hanged.

'A very just and public-spirited scheme indeed!

to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to
commit, and engage your country in a war that
must be its ruin, to support your pretensions to

an unjustifiable trade.

Mynheer Van Hogan, I am a Dutchman as well as you, and attached to my interest, as every Dutchman is; but that is, when my interest is not destructive of itself in the end, as I must tell you I think your present scheme is, in which I will be no farther concerned, than to try to prevent the evil consequences of it to the state: the rest may lie upon your own head.

Any thing in the way of trade my conscience complies with without scruple; I can take every oath that every officer of the customs in Europe can impose, and not think myself bound by any of them, further than they agree with my interest; I can supply the enemies of my country with arms to fight against ourselves, provided they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray my taxes towards the support of the war; I can receive circumcission, stroke down my beard, and swear by Mahomet, to avoid a tax at Smyrna; I can trample upon the cross, deny Christ, and call myself a Dutchman, to obtain leave to trade in fapan; but I will not cut the dykes to drown a rat at home.

I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, as I am this minute going to remit a subsidy to one of the German princes, whom England keeps in pay, to fight for their own preservation, from the same principles that it has long
fought our battles, and would again, if we did
not provoke it too far. And when this is done,
I am to meet the French ambassador, to settle terms
with him, for remitting the money that is to
pay the army which fights against the allies of
England. So that you see I am engaged, as you
may be, if your warmth, unnatural to the cool
temper of your country, will let you open your

eyes to your true interest.'

Mynheer Van Hogan departed rather filenced than fatisfied with the reasoning of my master, who sat down to negociate the hire of a principality with as much unconcern as he would that of a turnep-field; and bought and sold the inhabitants with as great indifference as he would have

bargained for a cask of herrings! in which fer-

vice it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I must have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious, of my late master, I must own there was something so grossy reprobate to every sense of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleased to leave him, and, indeed, to be candid, the country in general, where the very profession of virtue was despised, their only pretension to it being the absence of one vice, hypocrify, which they rejected as an unnecessary incumbrance, and acted their grosses are unnecessary incumbrance, or appearance of shame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the fovereign actor gave a dignity to the scenes, and the concerns of individuals were over whelmed and lost in the confusion of nations.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected of such passions.

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master, I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went.

G 5 Such

Such scenes as these cannot be made known by description to an inhabitant of this happy Island, whose situation defends it from the sudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval strength does from the more deliberate devastations of regular invasion; and the excellency of its laws, from the yet severer outrages of arbitrary power.

But, amid all this unhappiness, such is the infatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that, not content with these blessings, you are ever complaining, ever grasping at more, till, in the end, you lose the enjoyment of what you posses, insensible that your severest wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been faid that there is a certain degree of madness requisite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its first principle of self-preservation, to slight the most terrifying dangers, and seek the most severe evils that interrupt

its pursuit of an imaginary good.

The lust of power, and the intoxication of glory, may feem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature; but madness alone can support the mass of mankind through it, who are insensible to these fantastick motives, or at least cannot delude themselves with the faintest hope of ever

obtaining them.

Of this I saw many instances in my journey through the countries that were the scene of the present war; but one more particularly that happened in one of the *Dutch* travelling boats, early in our journey, made the strongest impression on me, and deserves relation most.——There had been an obstinate battle fought some time before between the parties then at war, in which the loss

was fo fevere, and fo equal on both fides, that, as foon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itself vanquished, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's situation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to affert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the misery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful scene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as soon as the first terrours of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved some of the inhabitants to go, and try to relieve as many of the deserted sufferers as had not perished for want of more timely assistance, without distinction, or respect

to any party.

Two of those victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had since founded a friendship on their common calamity, having been supported by the same charity, and cured of their wounds in the same bed, were now striving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcasses carried, like other worn-out instruments of the war, to their respective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water-side, where we had just taken boat, where they begged in the most moving terms to be admitted, but were absolutely refused, till one of the passengers, an English gentleman, took compassion on their distress, and paid their fare.

We were all feated in the equality usual in such vehicles, in which, as in a grave, all conditions

G 6

are thrown promiscuously together, when, the conversation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in most parts of Europe, and every one speaking variously, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the Englishman chanced to fay, that he thought such a combination of the greatest powers of Europe, as, at that time, laboured to oppress the King of Bulgaria, was, to diveft it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politicks to the rule of reason and justice, the most injurious, and even base abuse of power, that could be instanced in the Christian history; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his subjects to his cause, that is, really to their own cause, would rife superior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the stroke which they had perfidiously aimed at his ruin, to their dishonour and confusion.

The rage into which this reflexion, so injurious to the glory of the Grand Monarque, threw one of the passengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was so great, that he could not suppress it till the gentleman should conclude; but interrupting him, without the least respect to his personal obligation (for he was one of the two whom I mentioned to have been admitted into the boat on his charity) What do you mean, Sir (said he) by saying that this war will end in the

dishonour of the King of France? Was not his motive for entering into it the most dis-

his motive for entering into it the most difinterested and glorious? To support the rights for sovereignty, and bring vassals to a proper

fense of duty and obedience? And has not the

· fuccess been answerable to the greatness of his · designs?

defigns? Have not his forces been every-where

" victorious by land and fea?"

The tone of voice with which these words were spoken drew the eyesof all present upon the speaker, a little, old, withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and scarce seemed to have skin enough, not to say slesh, to cover the remainder of his shattered bones, and keep them together. But his spirit supplied all these disadvantages, and enabled him to raise himself upon his stumps, and cast a look of the most serocious rage around him, as if he meant to destroy whoever dared to dispute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury,
How (faid he) the army of France ever victorious over Bulgaria! What affurance can dictate
fuch a falfehood? Where have they obtained one
victory? where have they escaped defeat, except
when the superiority of their numbers have exceeded all proportion! and, even then, their
slain have generally equalled the whole amount
of the forces whom they fought with. What
armies have they lost already! how few of those
which remain will ever return to their native
home, even in the wretched condition that youdo!
These last words raised a general laugh at the
person who spoke them, he being, if possible, in

one to whom they were addressed, having lost both his arms, and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and fubmitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'I fee, gentlemen (faid he) that you 'laugh at my mentioning the wretchedness of any other living creature with contempt, who

a more maimed and helpless condition than the

am fuch a fufferer myself! but what absurdities

will not passion hurry men into! and how could human patience bear to hear this Frenchman

boast of the victories of his monarch, whose

forces I myself have affished to route, at every

' place where I have ever met them.

'You route the forces of my master! (replied the other) my master's forces would eat up all your master's subjects for a breakfast.'—'I do not deny their number, nor their appetites (re-

turned the Bulgarian) they leave fufficient evidence of both wherever they go; cruelty and ra-

pine lead forth their armies; famine and defola-

tion mark their marches. Shake not your head at me, nor lift up your hand, as you regard your

· life; else, loth as I am to make misery ridicu-· lous, by a quarrel between two such wretches as

we are, though I have not a hand to strike, with my foot will I spurn out your life, and trample

on your carcafe.'

· Morblieu! compare the mighty Monarque

of FRANCE with a little GERMAN king.'

You mistake me greatly; I never meant to compare them: the greatness of your monarch I do not deny, were it not abused to purposes that make it a dishonour to bim, and a missortune to

his subjects; whereas, our sovereign is the father

of his people, and never exerts his power but to their advantage.

Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth;
any thing against myself I can despise; but my
king, my father, I cannot, I will not hear spoken
of with disrespect, while I have even a voice lest
to assert his cause: I have sought for him—I

have fought with him: for he does not fit rioting in the debaucheries of a court, while his

6 subjects

fubjects are encountering hardships and dangers

to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels.

are the quarrels of his people; and he fights their battles with them! and the only regret I

feel for the loss of my limbs, is, that I can employ them no longer in his service, for which I

would lay down my life this minute with joy,

could it gain him the least advantage, or was it necessary to prove my attachment to him.

But, fince I can no longer have the happiness of being of service to him, all I have now to do, is to retire to my native country, where his paternal care has made such a provision for my wants, that I shall wear out my days in content, without ever having my prayers for his welfare and success disturbed by one repining wish, one

' just complaint.

But ask this vain-glorious knight-errant if he can say so? Did he fight for the preservation of his family, his country, and his religion, as I did? Did he fight under the conduct of his sovereign who personally provided for the necessities, the comfort of his men, as I did? Is he sure of a peaceful retreat at home, safe from the additional

' distress of want, as I am?

Not at all: he fought for he knew not what, he knew not whom. At a distance from his king, who was insensible of his dangers, and revelled in delicacies, while his subjects, the victims of his ambition, were destitute of the common, indispensable necessaries of nature; nor has he any other hope of prolonging his miserable days when he gets home, but the wretch's last resource of begging, in a country so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master, that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want of means

for its exertion.'——All present were struck with the force with which the foldier delivered his fentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply; but opening their common wallet, in which the Bulgarian carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himfelf, faying, with a fneer, that fince his feet were fo good, he might here-

after use them instead of hands, for he would

feed him no longer.'

This poor-spirited farcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied with a smile of disdain, though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present. But the Englishman received it in another manner, for, drawing out his purfe, he took twenty ducats, and putting them himself into the pocket of the Bulgarian:

' Accept of these, my brother soldier (said he) ' to make your journey into your native country

' more convenient, where you cannot meet more tender regard from your fovereign and

country than your fensible attachment to them

e merits. As far as I shall go your way I will · take care of you myself, and that will defray

the expense of the rest of your journey with

" comfort."

CHAP. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAL is carried to his destined master.

HE Bulgarian was unable to express his gratitude for this charity, the manner of presenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly

manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their affiltance.

As foon as he recovered utterance. Such (faid he) is the noble benevolence that distinguishes the fons of liberty! fuch the generofity of heart that always extends the ready hand of a Briton, with relief to the diffressed. May heaven preferve to your happy nation the bleffings which enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a bleffing to all who want their affistance. And though envy may malign, and ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence finds its reward in its own exertion, in the certainty of a

The turn of this foldier's discourse, and particularly the last part of it, seemed so much above his present appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor to ask him, 'if he had been bred to arms, or how long he had professed the military

' retribution from those treasures which never fail.'

' life, and in what station.'

'O, Sir,' (replied he with a figh, that seemed to tear his heart) ' your question recalls to my " memory scenes that I would willingly forget for ever, and obliges me to relate fuch things as would draw tears from Tartars, Pandours, or the crueller foldiers of the king of France.-' I was not bred to arms, nor have I followed the "military profession long, or in any other rank than that which rage and despair first placed me in, when I offered myself to my sovereign, to repel the invaders, and revenge the desolation of

'my bleeding country. My unhappy story is no

more than this-

I am a native of Bulgaria, the fon of a miinifter of the gospel, who, observing a desire of

knowledge in my youth, encouraged and improved it by his own precepts and example, and
led my studious mind through the sublimest paths

of science.

As foon as he faw my refolutions fufficiently established to be proof against the levity of youth, and temptations of sense, he yielded to my intreaties, and I was admitted into the facred order of which he was a member, and made the persection of human wisdom, the practice of piety and virtue under the direction of the divine word, the business of my happy life. Happy then, indeed! but now the recollection of that happiness aggravates my present misery in the irrecoverable loss of it, almost to despair.

As the religion of the benign Redeemer of mankind does not enjoin impossibilities, by requiring us to eradicate passions, which are the effence of our nature, and whose indulgence, under the direction of reason and virtue, is the end of our creation, and the basis of our being, and fulfils the first divine command, by continuing our species, and increasing the number of his adorers, I obeyed the impulse of virtuous love, and married the daughter of a neighbouring divine, who completed to me, as I vainly thought, the fum of human happiness, by a nue merous offspring, which grew upon the knee of their aged grandfire, my father, now become too feeble for the active duties, while my labours supplied the necessaries of life to my contented family, in which I thus stood the happy

centre of filial and paternal love.

In this blifsful state did I advance toward heaven, when envy of his glory, and fear of his virtues, brought this destructive war upon the dominions of our fovereign. O, my father! my children! my wife! in one day did I lose you all. These eyes beheld my habitation reduced to ashes, my children massacred in the wantonness of cruelty, in despite of the prayers of my aged father, whose snow-white hairs, whose whole appearance would have struck the ruthless hearts of the ancient heathen Gauls with reverence, in despite of the cries of my beauteous wife, who both begged to draw their fury on themselves, from the defenseless inno-' cents; but all in vain; the murtherers, deaf to their cries and intreaties, insensible to the beauty of the babes, who flood fmiling at the ' fwords that hung over their heads, first butchered them as in sport, then abused the person of ' my wife to death, and mangled my father's breathless body, whose tender heart the grief of such a fight had burst, while I, unhappier far than any, stood looking on bound to a tree, with my jaws distended with the head of a ' spear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a Bible being placed before me, and a · French Priest standing by, encouraging their cruelty as meritorious against hereticks, and ' infultingly bidding me preach now to my congregation, at the same time refusing me the re-' leafe of death, which I befought by all the ' figns despair could suggest, and making them leave me naked, and whipped till my bod; was all one wound, to perish by famine and grief. 6 But

But heaven had ordained otherwise for me; some of my neighbours, who had escaped their fury, came, as soon as night favoured their sears, to learn our fate, and offered any affistance in their power. They unbound me; they buried the remains of my slaughtered family, and forced me from the grave, to their retreat in the woods, where they healed my wounds, and strove to comfort my distress. But all their arguments would have been too weak to make me suffer life, had not a desire of revenge taken possession

of my foul, and filenced every other thought. · As foon as I had recovered strength, I hasted ' to the army of my fovereign, where I threw ' myself at his feet, and told him all my distress. · He heard me with pity; he shed tears at my fad ftory, and raising me with his own hand, Be comforted, my brother' (faid the mighty monarch to his meanest subject) 'be comforted, the loffes of the just will be repaid in heaven; there thy happy family expect thine arrival; there thy · virtues will be rewarded, thy joys complete; when the evils of this world, which endure but for a · moment, shall be at an end. The horrours of war agree not with the innocence of your past life, or the humane tenderness of your disposition, and would but aggravate your griefs, by the unhappy, una-. voidable repetition of like scenes of ruin. Retire, therefore, to my capital, where all the comforts of · life shall be provided for you, to alleviate your distress, while your prayers assist us in the day of battle.

I heard his words with reverence, but his virtue was too sublime for my imitation. I fell again at his feet, and wringing my hands, O Sir,

O Sir (said I) this goodness is too great for man; alas, I am unable to obey its dictates;

my foul languishes for vengeance: O, bear with

human infirmity, and permit me to fight under thy command. Heaven heard not my prayers,

or it would have prevented my ruin; let me then have recourse to other methods for redress:

then have recourse to other methods for redress;
let me contribute my poor help to thy victories,

to the deliverance of my country: I die this

moment if my prayer is refused.'

Be thou my companion in this just war,' (said my sovereign, raising me up again) and, since thy facred function must not be disgraced with any other rank, sight by my side, and lead me to success.'

From that day have I followed his steps in the field of battle, at an aweful distance; and

been witness to all the wonders of his conduct

and valour; till in the late action a cannon fhot took off both my arms, as I had the ho-

onour of holding my own horse for him to mount,
his having been killed under him as I sought by

his fide.

'He expressed concern at my missortune, and commanded me to retire to his own tent; but an Austrian hussar, the moment after, cut me down with his sabre, though in the unpremeditated instinct of self-preservation I had held

up both my bleeding stumps to ward the blow.

Here I lay among my fellow-sharers in the common calamity, in submissive expectation of the stroke of fate, from the horses feet, or the

' pillagers of the field, But heaven had other-' wife ordained; and, after two days weltering ' in my blood, I was relieved, and recovered by

in my blood, I was relieved, and recovered by charity, to the condition in which you fee me,

• and am now striving to go and avail myself • of my master's humane offer, which your bene-

· volence enables me to do with comfort.

This fellow-sufferer, whose arrogance first prompted me to speak, has been a sharer with me also in the charity which relieved us;

where our common calamity created a kind of friendship between us, and our necessities sug-

gested it to us to combine the remains of our limbs, for mutual affistance, he preparing our

victuals, and feeding me, while I have carried, not only our poor baggage, but him also, upon

my back.

But that alliance is at an end; not because the relief which you so generously have bestowed upon me may seem to free me from the ne-

ceffity of his affiftance, for I must beg your leave

to divide it with him, as half is sufficient for me,

but that my foul abhors the principle which first
led him into this distress, and which even such

fufferings cannot show the impious absurdity of;

and disclaims connexion with the enemy of my gracious sovereign, who would thus malign his

glory, when he cannot deny nor longer refift

' the virtues that have raised it.'

By this time we arrived at the place where I was to be delivered to the minister of my destined master, who immediately carried me to him.

CHAP. XXII.

How Chrysal found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolution to maintain the consequence of his rank.

W E found him busied in reviewing some new levies, which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence, than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance to support the lives so useful to him.

As foon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who, presenting the bag in which we were, with a bent knee, 'The subsidy, may it please your 'most serene highes, from England' (said he.)—'It is well (replied the sovereign) but upon 'what terms?'—'The same your highness had 'last year.'—'The same your highness had 'last year.'—'No more! They shall not have my 'men! I can have more elsewhere! France offers 'better.'—-'Then I must return this money, 'please your highness.'—-'Return it! No; for 'what?'——-'If your highness does not like 'the terms, you will not keep the money, I presume.'——-'Fool, but I will! Such laws may 'bind you subject wretches; but sovereign princes 'are

· are above them; laws are not made for us.'—
· I humbly implore your highness's pardon for
· my ignorance; then you will give those troops
· to France.'—— 'Yes, when France pays me
· for them.'—— But in the mean time, as Eng· Land has already paid your highness, they
· will depend upon them, and consequently suffer
· by the disappointment.'— Then let them prize
· my friendship properly another time; I am not
· obliged to support kings upon their thrones for no· thing; I may invade as well as guard against in· vasion. They shall know whom they dare offend.'
· Something has provoked your highness's

Something has provoked your highness's wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance should aggravate.'

I will teach the respect that's due to sovereignty.

I am not king of ENGLAND, curbed in my will, and limited in power; my subjects are my slaves; they dare not think of any other law besides my pleasure. Death! can you think it! My minister at the court of ENGLAND writes me word, that a base plebeian merchant has had the assurance to demand payment for the goods he sent me last year, for the support and splendour of my court; and, on its not being deducted from the subsidy, to resule supplying me this year, and even to threaten complaining to their parliament.

Now, judge you if a sovereign prince, whose forces are their security in time of danger, can brook such insolence. And, to conclude the whole, what did the English minister say, when my mi-

inifter remonstrated with him upon this affair, but that, by the laws of England, no man could be compelled to part with his property against his will,

or hindered to complain, if he thought himself ag-

grieved: and that the laws were facred, and must not be infringed. Think, now, if I can with honour keep an alliance with such people, till I have received satisfaction: I, whose subjects have no property nor laws but my will, to be treated in such a manner by a vile trader—it is not to be bor'n.'

I am very forry to hear of this affair, and particularly at this time; because, if your highness should break with the English now, when they think they want your men, they may be provoked never to deal with your highness for them another time, when they have no other occasion for them, only to do your highness a service.

Why, there may be something in that; and therefore, if they will send me the merchandise I want,
and raise the subsidy, perhaps I may not resuse them
the succours they desire.

How much does your highness require to have

the fubfidy raised?'
I have not thought of that yet. But surely they cannot be so unreasonable as to expect my men at the same rate, now in time of danger, as they had them in peace, when there was nothing at all for them to do, but they could work at their trades at home, and maintain themselves without wearing out their uniform, or any other expense to me?'—
That is very true; if your highness was not to consider at the same time, that even then they paid you as much as if it was a time of war, and indeed more than any other nation will, or can, pay you now; for, as to the promises of

France, they are not to be depended on at all, whereas England always pays well.'

Vol. II. H 'I do

I do not care! What I have gotten here I will keep, by way of reprifal for the infult offered to my honour; and, if they will have my troops, they

· Shall pay me over again for them: so, say no more

on that head.'

I fubmit; but how will your highness subsisted them at home in the mean time? There must

be an immediate remittance made of fome of this money to Helland to buy provisions for

this money to Holland, to buy provisions, for your magazines are quite exhausted, and the

constant demand for men, to supply the troops you have agreed for, and recruit the losses they

have sustained in battle, have not left sufficient

to cultivate the land.'

Then let them starve! I shall not expend a penny to support them. Could not the women and children

work? I wonder you should dare to mention such a thing. If I lay out this money, what is to support

the splendour of my court, since this Englishman

· has refused to supply me?"

I humbly beg your highness's pardon, but what answer am I to send to the English, who have demanded that the troops should march

directly?"

Why, that I am so enraged at the insult offered to me by that merchant, that I will not let a man of them stir till I have satisfaction, and a new sub-

fidy; and that I keep this one in the mean time, to

make up the deficiencies in former years.'

Deficiencies! I do not understand your higheness; the subsidies have been always regularly

paid.

Gobey my commands! I say there have been deficiencies, which I am not at leisure to explain in this emergency, but I suppose my word will be

taken for it.'

I fear your highness does not attend to the change which has lately been in England. The e people who might have taken fuch an answer are now out of power; and their successors are the very men who have always been against dealing with your highness, and may now take the advantage of this breach of faith, for such · I well know they will call it, to throw off your alliance for ever: for the people begin to fee their own strength, and their governours to exert it properly, and show them that they want no foreign assistance. And, as a proof of this, at this very time, when their enemies not only talk of invading them more confidently ' than ever, but also have gone so far as to make ' preparations for fuch an attempt, so far from being diffident of their own strength, or intimidated to call for help, they have actually fent a powerful body of their troops abroad, and are carrying on the war with vigour and ' fuccess in every quarter of the world; satisfied that the inhabitants who remain at home are able to defend their country, and repel every attempt that may be made against it. And ' this change in their measures should give a caution how the persons who effected it are provoked.'

I care not; I will make the experiment; but do you draw up your despatches in such a manner, that we may have it in our power to explain them to whatever sense shall suit us best. In the mean time, we must keep up our appearance of treating with FRANCE, to give a weight to our

designs.

The minister was prevented from replying, by the enterance of the muster-master, who had been H 2 just making a survey, and taking an account of every man, able to bear arms, in his highness's territories.

Well (faid his highness) how do your musters answer? Shall I be able to enlarge the number of my troops this year?'-- 'May it · please your most serene highness (replied the · officer) here is the return, in which I have taken down every man from twelve to feventy, accord-' ing to your commands.'--- ' And how do they answer? Better than last year, I hope: there must · be a great many boys have grown up since.'- 'The · lift, indeed, looks almost as full as usual; but the · late battles have fo drained us of men to fill up the troops, that there are fcarce any but boys · left at home; and those have been so badly fed of late, that their fize does not answer their vears, and they look wretchedly besides. So that, · upon the whole, I fear your highness will find it

very difficult to complete the forces already established, much more to raise any new.'

I must, I will raise them! Tell me not of disficulties! What I command shall be performed! If
there are not men, the women shall put on the men's
clothes and go; I will not be shortened of my revenue; they shall fight themselves, since they have not
bred soldiers for me.

This, please your highness, is a list of the disabled men, who are not able to support themselves by any kind of work, having lost their

· limbs in the wars.'

* Disabled men! I thought I ordered you not to exchange them. They might have remained in the hands of the enemy; such of them, I mean, as are not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate the

lands: or, such as were not prisoners might have

· been let perish of their wounds; it would have been

a mercy to them to shorten their misery.'

'May it please your highness, I observed your orders, and left a number of such wretches

unexchanged; but the enemy faw into my defign, and fent them home, to be rid of the trou-

ble of them: and now they are crying for sub-

fistence, and demand the arrears of their pay, which was stopped while they were prisoners.

'The others our furgeons took proper care of.'
'Infolent flawes! Demand pay, when they are no

longer able to earn it! And subsistence too! They learned this impudence from their conversation with those English! It is much they did not demand roast

beef and pudding too! — Hang up half of them, the next word of the kind they dare to utter, to ter-

rify the other half to starve in quiet. And at your

· peril let me hear no more of them.

" As for the musters, I will have them completed; man, woman, and child shall go! I will make my

dominions a desert, before I lessen my consequence

among the sovereign powers of Europe.'

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. Chrysal is sent to market, where he is given to a few for bacon.

TIS highness had just declared this magnani-I mous resolution, when the steward of his household entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next Hans-town, from whence his table was supplied, had refused to fend him any more provisions till their bills were paid, as they had heard that he was to receive no more fubfidies from England; and there was scarce enough to make out dinner for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princesses of the various branches of his highness's most illustrious house having come to pay him a visit of congratulation upon the birth of the most ferene prince his fon and heir: and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominons fit for his table, but bear's flesh and venison; nor even a sufficient quantity of these, the mifery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his forests, to fave themselves and their families from perishing by famine.

His highness had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority and pleasure; but then bursting into a rage, 'Hunt in my forests! (said he.) Audacious slaves! Dearly shall they pay for their presumption! Order my troops

troops to march that way directly! I'll lay the country waste!'— Please your highness (replied the steward) that will cost you the trouble of marching your troops: the country is a defert already.'

Who told you that they have been guilty of this insolence? You should have seised the author of the

report, for not apprehending the criminals.'

May it please your highness, they took one wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here, to receive the sentence of your pleasure; and the stag with him alive, which he found in a pit, and borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded hunger, and the cries of a starving samily of grand-children, for he is an old man, and his three sons have been killed in the wars; but, though I own he moved me, I did not presume to let him go.'

It is well you did not, or you should have suffered in his stead. Go, strip him naked, bind him on that stag, and then let him loose with him upon his back into the woods, proclaiming, that no one, upon pain of death, presume to give him the least relief: he

' shall have hunting enough."

But what will your highness have me to do about provisions for the entertainment of the princes? I believe they design a long visit, for they have brought all the young princes and princes of their illustrious families with them.

'I care not! I am not to be disturbed on such tristes now, when the fate of nations depends on my

resolutions. Let them go home again.'

Not fasting, I presume; for they have already fignished, some of them, that they have come without their breakfasts, by calling for refreshment themoment they arrived; and, indeed, I fear H 4

the principal motive of this vifit of their high.
neffes was want of any thing to eat at home.

. Confusion! What can I do? Here, take this

" money, and send for victuals for them."

The fight of a handful of guineas was an agreeable furprise to the steward, who had not heard of the arrival of the subsidy from England. He received them with evident pleasure, and I selt no less in being delivered from this scene of sovereignty, of which I was sincerely sick; though, by the change, I sell from being the price of armies to the domestick office of going to market for a morsel of bread, from the glory of causing the slaughter of thousands to the virtue of supporting the lives of a few.

The steward, as soon as he withdrew from the presence of his highness, called the other officers of the household together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their master's breaking with England, so that they might look famine in the face for another year; and confirmed the glad

tidings, by showing them the gold.

The pleasing fight raised universal joy; they licked their lips, feasted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing minds and keen appetites; while the steward, not caring to trust a commission of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash down a mouldy crust with a draught of sour wine, and then went to market for them himself.

The appearance of things changed as foon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and entered into the little territories of a free state.

Plenty

Plenty was the reward of industry, and content

supplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and, ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greatest despatch to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew, for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice.

bits to eat themselves...

C H A P. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the Passover in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.

I Now entered into a fervice, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last; my present master denying himself the very necessaries of life, to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last lived in the most vain oftentation of splendour, to conceal his poverty

under the appearance of riches.

It is difficult to fay which hypocrify was most absurd, and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral justice: the former basely stealing, as I may say, from the publick, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whose value arises only from its being used, by thus secreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjustifiable as that avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to supply the want of it.

I here was foon initiated into all the mysteries of that lower species of trade called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engrossed by those people. False weights and measures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury; in a word, every species of deceit that can impose upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a science, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earliest exertion of reason, to wear off every hesitation

fitation of conscience, and make the practice na-

tural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto escaped mutilation, made my master, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminished heap, as I should but make their loss the more remarkable. He, therefore, put me into his purse, to make a show with upon occasions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, of which he was too strongly suspected.

The evening after I came into his possession happened to be one of their most solemn festivals. My master, therefore, who was one of the tribe of Levi, retired from business early, to purify and prepare himself for the celebration of the most secret and mysterious ceremony of their re-

ligion.

This was the facrifice of the Paffover, which, by a fecret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood; for which purpose the most beautiful children were purchased at any expense, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of necessitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of fervants, if they could not be obtained by stealth, and brought from all parts of Europe to these ceremonies: it being a long-received opinion, that the original facrifice of a lamb was defigned only for that one occasion, to conciliate the favour of Heaven to the escape of their forefathers out of Egypt; but that, to render it propitious to their restoration to their country, and to the confummation of their promifed happiness H 6

and glory, the type must be changed for the thing typisied, and human blood, in the purest state of infant innocence, be offered instead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But, as some traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts divested of the seelings of common humanity, to remove every obstacle to this practice, and stimulate superstition by hatred and revenge, the children of Christians were appointed for this sacrifice, and those especially of the superior ranks of life, whose pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with severity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the institution of the Passover were literally observed, in respect to the victim, who was to be without blemish, a male of the first year, that is, the first-born of his mother, and to be kept fourteen days before he was sacrificed, during which time they fed him with the richest food, to raise him to the

highest perfection of his nature.

The place chosen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a summer-house in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their synagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As soon as they were placed in order, one of the elders stood up, and in a long speech declared the occasion of their meeting, and read the original institution of the Passover, and then recited the tradition which changed the sacrifice to be offered, as I said before; concluding with an oath of secresy, which all present joined in and confirmed with the most dreadful imprecations, and which was to be sealed by the participation of this horrid mystery.

When

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved by those who had provided them, and who were re-embursed their expences before the facrifices began, by the general contribution of all present.

This method was used, that every person might have an equal share in the merit of the sacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expensive to provide a lamb for every head of a family in the con-

gregation.

The END of the FIRST BOOK.

· The part of the second secon

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A G U I N E A.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed.

This cleared up without a miracle. The few furvivors of the first fury brought to publick justice.

I See your astonishment how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleased with the breach of his most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action against which his severest vengeance is denounced; yet, such are the errors which the least deviation from the straight paths of reason lead to, when ceremony is made the essence of religion, and human inventions substituted in the place of immutable, eternal virtue.

The

The Devil, whoever is meant by that most comprehensive name, has long been charged with being the author of this and every other vice and folly, which men are ashamed of owning themselves; his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuse. But, if man would consider a little, he must blush at so unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor Devil his due, who, among all his failings, has never been suspected of being a fool, and nothing else could have devised such gross enormities, such contradictions to the plainest rules of common reason.

But of this strange institution of human facrifices we need fearch for the original no farther than in the heart of man, who, observing, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its bleffings to be made, in the way of oblation or facrince, foon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and meafuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he arose from a lamb to an hetacomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of Heaven, hindering him to fee the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the infiruments for flaying, and the fires for roafting them (for, horrour to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the butchers, of whom my master was one, just

going

going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an outcry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of foldiers rushed in, and seised them, as

they stood stupished with the fright.

The horrour of the fight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the foldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an aftonishment that deprived them of power to ffir for fome moments. But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the form to gather; for, as they flood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, O, father !father! come and untie my hands! these ugly cords burt me!

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer, who commanded the party, than, starting in a frenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and fnatching him up in his arms, 'O 'my-child! (said he, in an extasy) have I found ' you! have I rescued you in the very moment when ' you are going to be facrificed by these wretches. O

" my child! my child!

These words awoke the fury of the soldiers, which burst upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be restrained. The house was in a moment a scene of horrour beyond description. Most of them fell instant facrifices to this refistless rage. Happier far in having so speedy an end put to their fufferings, than the few furvivors, who faved their lives for that moment, by throwing themselves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of passion, the foldiers took all care not to hurt.

The

The little respite, which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the soldiers, who would not be persuaded to spare the rest, by any other argument, but a positive assurance of having them put to the most severe and infamous publick death.

When the storm was a little calmed by these means, and the living separated from the dead, the pillage of the scene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the most unrelenting feverity, and retaliated their wicked intentions, with exemplary justice, on the miserable criminals, stripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their destined victims, who were unbound with the tenderest care, and carried away till their parents should be discovered, or, in case that could not be, to be educated at the publick expense, as the children of the state, while their intended murtherers were thrown into prison, till a punishment should be appointed severe enough for their guilt.

In the confusion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer who had found his child, whose passions were raised so high by the recovery of him, that, as soon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to share

his joy with his disconfolate wife.

The tenderness of this meeting was a just reverse of the former part of the last scene, where the helpless infants were led forth to be slaughtered.

As the Jews were some of the wealthiest of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magistrates, to prevent the impu-

imputation of injustice, and to set the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the rescued infants were produced on one fide, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new master, who bore a confiderable office in the state, besides his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a fhort, but moving speech. He told them, 'that, having loft his only child, the infant there prefent about a month before, and having been informed, when he ferved in Poland, in his 'youth, that the Jews had a custom of stealing and facrificing, or murthering infants, on the night when they celebrated their Passover, he made no fearch for him, but feemed to beblieve a story which he had invented himself, to ' appeale the destraction of his wife, that he had been killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that was kept in the garden of his country-house, from whence he was stolen, watching, in the mean time, every motion of the Jews with fuch exactness, that he had punctual information of their meeting at the place where he had feifed them the evening before: where it was to be lamented, that the just resentment of the foldiers had anticipated the feverer hand of justice, and saved them from the laws, the ' judgement of which he now demanded against the remaining few, for himself, and for the unknown parents of the innocent victims whom ' they faw before them.'

A roar of universal indignation pursued his words, which had inflamed the rage and detestation of the people so high, that they were with difficulty

difficulty restrained from tearing the wretches instantly to pieces by the same arguments which had saved them from the soldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to say a word in their own defense, for, though none of the infants had been actually murthered that night, yet the intention was beyond controversy, and, beside, many of the people, who had formerly lost their children, now charged them with their murther, with the strongest appearance of justice.

They were therefore dragged back to prison, where they lay loaded with chains, till the day of their execution, when they were all publickly burned alive on the very spot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the house being rased to the ground for that purpose, and all the effects of such as were taken in this fact confiscated to

the use of the state.

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented brings CHRYSAL into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The King of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflexions on the sight of CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was scarce ended, when I changed my master again. The city in which I was, had professed a neutrality in the present war, but whether yielding to inclination, or biassed by private interest, the magistrates had,

on many occasions, shown the strongest partiality

to the enemies of the King of Bulgaria.

Of this that heroick prince over-looked many inflances, in compaffion to their folly; but, inflead of inspiring them with proper sentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raised their injudicious pride so high, that, attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded so far, as to resuse him those good offices, which, by the universal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his messengers with disrespect.

This drew on them a refentment that was never raised in vain. The king, without deigning to waste time in complaints, sent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their safety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with submissions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being

guilty of the like folly.

As these contributions were too large to be immediately discharged by the state, they were obliged to be levied on the subjects; by which means I came into the service of this monarch, to whose treasurer I was paid, by the humbled magistrates

of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince had long made me wish for such an opportunity of seeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge, whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions, to be. How my expectations were answered cannot be explained justly, without a particular account of everything I saw, while I was with him; but, as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow short,

fhort, I shall only give you a few of the most remarkable particulars, by which you may form a

judgement of the rest.

The king was walking in his camp before the enterance of his tent, after having finished the business of the morning, conversing with the most engaging affability with his officers, and even the private sentiness of his guard, redressing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magistrates of the city I had just left arrived to pay their contributions, and make submission for their misbehaviour; for, to humble them the more effectually, he had ordered, that they should attend himself.

As foon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and, delivering the money to his treasurer, implored his pardon, in the most abject terms of submission. 'Arise (said the monarch) and cease your supplications; the posture and address are both improper to be offered to a man; but the passions of the soolish are ever in extremes; and your fear sinks you now as low, as your vain insolence raised you high before. Depart in peace and safety; and let this teach you, not to mistake moderation for fear, another time. But, beware that you offend not so again. Mercy, that is amiable in the first instance, degenerates to folly, if extended to a second.'

The magistrates, unable to speak before him, retired in confusion from his presence, when turning to his treasurer, 'Take (said he) so much of that money as will repair the losses sustained by the innocent inhabitants of the country around their city, and see that it is given to fufferers,

fufferers, to be applied to that use, and none other, for I war not with the poor, nor would

I have my steps marked by desolation, when it can possibly be avoided. And of the re-

mainder leave the usual sum upon my table, for

my private occasions.'

Then addressing himself to the officers around him in general, 'How abject (said he) is the submission of the proud! how does guilt humble the conscious heart! These unhappy men, who dared not now meet our eyes, but hasted with down-cast looks from the slash of just indignation, when last we saw them, looked us in the face with the assurance of friendly respect, and seemed happy in the marks of our regard. Let

this teach us to preserve the adamantine shield of a clear conscience, and terrour can never

frike a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When the treasurer went to divide the money, among which I lay, according to his master's orders, I was greatly alarmed, for fear I should be torn so soon from the presence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his master's

pages, to lay upon his table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatness, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his person. This made me surprised to find every thing in a plainness far greater than what I had in many instances observed in private life. But I instantly perceived my error, and that his greatness was his own, established on the virtues of his soul, and independent of, and superiour to every adventitious circumstance.

I had

I had not long lain upon his table when he entered alone, and, walking a meditated turn or two across the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his soul in the most ardent devotion to Heaven.

He then arose, with a serenely chearful countenance, and, coming to the table, poured out the money, and viewing it earnestly for a moment, 'O thou fource of every evil which difracts this wretched world (faid he) let me o not be infected by thy poison; let not my heart conceive a fondness for thee, further than what thy native value of enabling it to do good, justly intitles thee to: I am yet free from thy infatuation; nor have ever suffered avarice to tempt me to defire thee, by improe per means, nor vain luxury, or pride, to abuse thee by profusion. This pittance only do I call ' my own, which I devote to the divine author of all the benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by supplying with it the necessities of my diffressed fellow-creatures.'

Then taking an handful of it, to put into his pocket, and happening to observe my shape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is 'there no corner of the earth (said he) where 'the wealth of Britain is not dispersed? If its 'commerce collects the produce of every climate under heaven, its munificence does also diffuse its riches as far. Great and happy nation! wer't thou but sensible of the blessings of thy condition—but the time is come, when thou openest thine eyes to thine own interest, and feelest the mightiness of thy strength. How great is the power of true wisdom! how happy

the people who have a good man for their

Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and, as foon as it was dark, wrapped himself in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a disguise that secured him from misinformation or deceit.

CHAP. III.

The King takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had feen of war, made me expect a fcene of tumult and confusion. But how was I surprised here to find every thing as regular and tranquil as in the best governed city in the midst of peace!

My master had not walked far, when some conversation, that seemed to be carried on with warmth in one of the tents, catching his ear, he stopped to listen what might be the subject of it: I imagine (said a voice within) that we shall have a battle soon: the chearfulness of the king's looks, and the more than common spirits he has been in for these few days, are certain signs that he has some great things in view. I always observe him so before a battle.

'The fooner it comes the better (replied another) I only wish that our forces were not so Vol. II. 'overovermatched in numbers; not that I fear fuccess
when he is with us; but that we may be able
to give them a total defeat at once, and so prevent their making head again. For such is the
inequality at present, that while we are killing
half of them the other half escape; and, though
what we destroy exceeds the number of our own

army, yet another army of the runaways still

remains to give us more trouble. But, however, we must only do our duty, and kill them all one

after another.'

And so we will, brother (continued the other) if it please God to preserve our king to us; for while we have him we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only increases the glory of vanquishing them. Indeed, I wonder how they can stand before us even as they do; wretches that are dragged to the war · against their inclination, who have no interest in the event, no attachment to their leaders! But what attachment should they have to such · leaders, who show no regard to their distresses, onor make any provision for their wants, but just drive them to battle, like oxen to the flaughter, and, when it is over, take no further care about them, but let them perish by famine, if they cannot relieve themselves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike,

through which they go!'
Well, brother (returned a third voice) thank
God that is not our case; we follow a leader
who is a father to his soldiers, and provides for
all their occasions. We fight for ourselves and

our families, for our laws and religion, and are fure that he will support us in the enjoyment of

• them, when he has disappointed the designs of

his enemies, and restored peace to his people:

but if we are to fight to-morrow we had better

s take our rest to-night, to make us fresh and ftrong for the battle. God bless and preserve

our king; whilft his care watches over us, we

can fleep in fafety in the midst of our enemies.

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the King with the fublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eye. my God! (faid he, when the voices ceased) enable me to protect this people, and to bring this just war to an happy end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues.'-He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he saw that all things were in proper order in the camp, his next care was to vifit the quarters of the wounded and fick, for he would not trust them to any person, where he could possibly attend to

The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils infeparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care which directed and supported it. No riot or diforder; no negligence or abuse among the attendants; no misapplication or embezzlement of the provisions made for the patients: all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other scenes of the same nature which I had seen before!

them himself.

If he was delighted with the spirited attachment of his foldiers in health, his delight was almost raised to extasy, by the behaviour of these victims of the madness of the great. The thought of I 2 having having fuffered in his cause the extremest anguish of pain, not even the agonies of death ever making them utter a syllable to his disadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preservation was always joined with their own relief, and his happiness recommended with their souls to Heaven.

This was too moving to be long bor'n; he joined in the general prayer, and hasted from the tender scene, as soon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a strict view of every thing in which his orders might be disobeyed, and these his particular family, as he called them, suffer by neglect.

His tour was now finished, and he returned to his tent, to take his necessary rest, having distributed, on the various occasions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him except me, who happened to stick in the corner of

his pocket.

Temperance, exercise, and serenity of conficience insured his repose; he fell asleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his usual early time of rising next morning, when he returned to the satigue and perplexity of such a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head and undismayed heart, and soon reduced the consusion of them into such order, as made their execution easy.

As the foldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The King had scarce finished the business of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion. I expected it (said the King coolly;) I knew they could not remain long in the situation they were in. But let us observe

6 their

their motions, that we may regulate our's by

Then, ordering some of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring house, from whence he could view them distinctly, where, having observed them attentively for some considerable time, 'It is done, my friends!' (said he, with a smile of joy that enlightened all his face;) 'it is done! That last motion is 'what we wanted. Let us haste, and embrace 'the opportunity which Heaven has put into our hands.'—Then, descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and, putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles are never satisfactory; the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall, therefore, only say, that my master was completely victorious: and, to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person; the excellent disposition he had made of the rest rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without refistance. The field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to submit to superiour valour; and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of

1 3

his enemies had menaced his destruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity with which he slew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with assonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over, when, cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.

THE transactions succeeding this event were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that, to a being free from the contradictory frensies of mankind, the very thought is painful.—His majesty's next care, after returning publick thanks to Heaven on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of his soldiers. He praised, he promoted, he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and dispositions. Nor was his justice more bounteous in the reward of

of merit, than fevere in the punishment of the want of it.

Under such a leader, what forces could withfland his soldiers? Under the discerning eye of such a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to distinguish himself in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour; who dared to be guilty of disobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle the victorious army was directly marched away to a fiege, their fuc cess in which was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with ad-

vantage.

Such a round of carnage was so shocking, that the virtues of my master were not a balance to the horrours of his service, and I began to wish for a release from such a scene of glory, when an unexpected occasion showed me his character in a light that raised my admiration of him still

higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private foldier, threw himself prostrate across his way, crying, ' Mercy! O great King! Have mercy on the sufferings of a wretch in despair, and show ' your self the substitute of Heaven, by impartial justice.'-The guards and attendants on the King would have spurned the suppliant out of the way, but his Majesty, struck with the strangeness of the address, and imagining it must proceed from some extraordinary cause, interposed, and bidding him arife, 'What is the grievance you complain of?' (faid he, with a placid look and encouraging ac-14 cent)

cent) or against whom do you so solemnly im-

• plore justice?'

'O great and good King!' (replied the stranger, with an air that bespoke something above his present appearance) 'my griefs are too many to be told fo concifely as your prefent fituation demands; and the justice I implore will require time to divest nature of its strongest passions.'-What can this mean! (faid the monarch in furprise.) Meet me directly at my tent, and expect ' that justice which the simplicity of truth shall be entitled to, without these laboured exclamations. -The business which his mind was intent upon prevented the King's thinking any more of this affair, till he faw the man at his return to his tent; when calling to him, 'Now (faid he) · speak your griefs with the boldness, but also with the guard of truth, and doubt not the redress of ' justice.'—Encouraged by these words, thestranger, bowing his head, and paufing a moment, as if to support his grief, began thus: 'So may the ear of Heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O gracious King, as thou hast readily vouchsafed to hear my cries! So may its justice redress thy wrongs, as thou shalt deal with mine! Thou feelt before thee the most wretched of mankind, whom despair has reduced to the necessity of flying from the defense of his country, and imoploring justice for his private wrongs, from the declared foe of my fovereign. But let me not waste your time with fruitless complaints. My ' name, though spoken with some respect in my native country, is too obscure to have reached your ears, as my ancestors wisely confined their ' virtues to private life, nor ever laboured to em-

6 blazon

blazon their names with titles, that too often

marr the happiness of their owners.

In their steps I trod, till the wrath of Heaven kindled the ambition of princes, and my country became the theatre of their contention. then thought it my duty to arise in its defense, and the justice of my motive drew success on my attempts. But, while I vainly indulged the hope of being instrumental in delivering my country from the horrours of war, a foe broke into my house, thus destitute of its defender, and rifled all the treasure of my soul! O my unhappy wife! my newly wedded, beauteous wife! In vain didst thou call upon me in the hour of thy distress! when the hand of the ravisher was twifted in thine hair, and the horrours of 'immediate ruin took possession of thy soul! 'Thy protector was away, busied in the defense of others, while the wolf was ravaging his deferted fold.

But whither does my distraction hurry me? O pardon, gracious monarch, the inconfiftencies of despair! I will be brief; I will not trespass on thy precious time.'—He paused then a moment, till a flood of tears eafed the fulness of his

heart, and then proceeded thus:

' In the irruption of thy troops into Bohemia, about fix months ago, my unhappy fortune led a party of them to my house, where the industry of my ancestors, for ages of peace, fell a ' facrifice to the wantonness of unrestrained devastation in one moment. But I complain not of this. It was my share of the indiscriminate calamity. Alas! my woes are of another nature.

camp.

• The beauty of my wife struck the very hard-

ened hearts of the foldiers with fuch reverence, that, in the fury of their outrage, they dared

one to lay a facrilegious hand on her: but this

fafeguard that protected her from rapine, only raifed the more audacious rage of lust against her.

' The officer who commanded the party no sooner

faw her, than, inflamed with brutal defire, he hurried her away with him to the camp, where

imagination finks in horrour from the thought

of what the may have fuffered.

The news of my misfortune foon reached · me. No restraints of military duty were of force to hold me a moment; I flew to the scene of my ruin, where, having learned what I have related to you, the greatness of my grief · stupified me for a time, till the thought of my wife's being still alive, and in the possession of her ravisher, roused me to a resolution of labouring for her relief. I, therefore, immedi-* ately entered in difguise into those very troops which had perpetrated my ruin, as I despaired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any other means. My stratagem had success; I foon learned that the officer, who had brought my wife from my house, had been obliged to give her up to his general, who had demanded

A dawn of hope broke in upon me; though

her as foon as she had been brought to the

I could not gain any account of her after this:
I thought that a man honoured with your particular esteem must be possessed of virtue; and

this, I knew, must be her protection.

Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin my own corps, where my absence was easily excused to a general who was my friend, and who readily yielded to my request of sending a trumpet, with a letter, to enquire for such a lady, and to desire that she might be treated with the tenderness and respect due to her sex and beauty, till she should be restored to her friends.

But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, when an answer was returned, that the general knew not of such a person. Despair now stared me in the face; I saw all the horrours of my condition; and would that instant have returned in my disguise and stabbed the ravisher at the head of his forces, had I not reslected that my Theodora might be only exposed by such an action to new insults, and her life, perhaps, sacrificed in torture and ignominy to

revenge.

While I fluctuated in this distress, Heaven inspired me with the thought of having recourse to your justice. Though he is the enemy of my fovereign, faid I, he is a man who feels the tender impulse of humanity; he is a king who delights in justice! I therefore reassumed my difguise, and entered into your camp as a deferter, the night before this battle, in which instinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged me to the duty of a foldier, and I happened to fight near your person; where, though I was senfible of my crime, in affifting the enemy of my fovereign, I had this palliative confolation, that the forces I engaged were not my fellow-sube jects, but those of a perfidious ally, who entered into the war only to take his own ad-" vantage, 16

- vantage, when a proper opportunity should offer.
- 'This, O gracious King! is my unhappy ftory. This is the grievance for which I im-
- oplore thy justice; for which I fought against the allies of my fovereign yesterday; for which
- I threw myself before your horse's feet this morning; for which I now call upon you by
- that Power who has placed you as his fubititute on earth, and will require an account
- of thy stewardship. O justice! justice! ju-
 - · flice!'

CHAP. V.

The King sends for the General, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new tryal of the King's fortitude and activity of foul.

HE King heard out the stranger's story without interruption; and then, addressing himself to his officers and attendants round him, · How unhappy (faid he) is the condition of • princes, who must be answerable for the crimes of their fervants, as if every man's own were onot more than he can bear!

· I thought this man as upright as I knew him brave: I thought justice and mercy attempered valour in his breaft. But perhaps he is wronged; let us not judge too haftily.

(turning to one of his officers) bid him come

to me directly, nor tell him a word of the oc-

casion. If he is guilty, he has forfeited my efteem for ever; but, if this complaint is only a

calumny devised to exasperate me against one of

my best friends, severely shall the author of it feel that justice which he so solemnly implores.

Let him, therefore, be taken into custody till the

event decides the doubt; but let him be treated with that humanity which his apparent diffrefs

flands in need of; nor let any hardship or indig-

' nity give justice the appearance of prejudice, or

' feem to intimidate his resolution.'

He then retired to enjoy those few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his

His Majesty's commands were so punctually obeyed, that the General arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his master, who received him with his usual familiarity; and having conferred with him for fome time, on the fituation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the stranger to be brought to confront him, and then spoke thus, as if in continuation of his former discourse: 'It has ever been my strongest wish, my most positive come mand, that the calamities of this necessary war fhould fall as light as possible on the innocent · subjects of thole powers who have provoked it; particularly, I have always enjoined the frictest care to avoid every unnecessary devastation of private property, every appearance of cruelty or ill treatment to the defenseless weakness of the aged, of women, and children. What,

then, must be my grief to find these orders disobeyed! to find that the ruins of the poor mark

6 the

the marches of my armies, and the cries of private anguish arise to Heaven against me!

Sut these enormities shall not lie on my head

for neglect of punishing them, nor be persisted in on the hope of impunity. Were my righthand

guilty of fuch crimes, I would cut it off with my left, rather than it should infect my mind.

The folemnity with which the King spoke these words struck all present with terror for the accused, who alone was ignorant of their design. The King saw the general concern, and, to let the impression sink the deeper, he paused some moments before he proceeded; then, turning short upon the General with a determined look and aweful voice, Tell me (said he) where is the woman whom thou hadst from the officer who brought her to the camp, when the forces under thy command entered into Bobemia? the woman whom the Bobemian general sent to enquire after in vain; and whom, I fear, thou didst deny, and still

The unexpectedness of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all presence of mind: he stood abashed, and the consustion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The King saw his distress with the greatest concern; but, superiour to every private regard that could interfere with his sublimer character, 'Tell me where she is this instant! (said he) nor aggravate, by falsehood,

crimes already too flagrant; for I will know the

whole of this black affair.'

O, Sir! (replied the General, throwing himfelf at his feet) I acknowledge my crime; but I cannot bear thy wrath. Let me die this moment; let that punishment expiate my guilt; but afflict me no longer with thy displeasure, which is heavier than I can bear.'— Where is the woman? Speak.'— Safe and inviolate in my tent. My entreaties have not been able to prevail

on her virtue; and my passion was too delicate

to seek gratification by force.'— This moment let her be sent for! and let the cause of her coming be

concealed from her: I will learn the truth of this frange affair from herself. In the mean time, let her husband be treated with tenderness and respect.

His misfortunes deserve compassion.

The King had scarce faid this, when an express arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulsed with great loss, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital. - Thy will be done, O God! (faid the King.) Thy will be done.' --- And then, without any appearance of furprise or alteration in his looks, he instantly gave orders for a strong detachment of the army under his own command to march to the re-enforcement of that which had fuffered this los; and retired to consider of the alterations which this event must necessarily occasion in the operations of the campaign, and write his feveral orders accordingly, for he was his own fecretary.

But, though his looks were thus easy, his heart severely felt this missfortune. OGod! (said he, as soon as he was alone) when will thy wrath be appeased? When shall this people have rest? If I am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on my head alone, but spare them! There is nothing certain in this life; nothing worth a wise man's care or regard. The victory with which it pleased thee to bless our arms so lately, raised my hopes to a prospect of peace. But the scene is

now changed; and this advantage will raise the
 pride and malice of our enemies still higher, and

make new deluges of blood necessary to bring them to a sense of reason and justice. Thy will

be done, O Lord! But, as it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make use of the means which

thou hast put into our power to accomplish that

end which appears to us most just and advantageous. The horrours of the war are ready to burst

upon my country, after all my endeavours to fave it, and divert them elsewhere. But they shall

onot unopposed; I myself will stand in the

breach, and defend my native country.'

The ferenity in the looks of the King had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greatest alacrity: and, though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occasioned neither disorder nor confusion. Active as light, the King was every-where, ordered every thing, saw every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his soldiers as for the greatest possible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquished, for they were but men; but to deject or disorder his mind was not in the power of any event.

CHAP. VI.

of the diagraph windows and the diagram

the

nd

ng

2-

it

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. Chrysal changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of Bulgaria, and the probable consequences of the war.

By this time the Bohemian lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The first sight of this woman raised emotions in his heart which it had long been a stranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a sweetness and expression in her looks beyond description, soon made him sensible that all his heroism could not eradicate the passions of nature, and raised his pity both for the unfortunate general and for her husband.

He stood some moments gazing at her in silent assonishment; but recollecting himself soon, he addressed her thus with the highest complacency and respect in his look and accent: 'I have sent for you made to this improper place for the

- for you, madam, to this improper place for the delicacy of your fex, to learn from yourfelf the
- manner of your having been brought away
- from Bohemia, and the Lause of your being fince detained by the general of my army.
- Speak, madam, have you suffered any violence, any usage improper for your sex and merit?

· Speak with the assurance of truth, and expect

' justice and redress.'

O mighty king, (said the lady, prostrating · herself at his feet) oft have I heard of thy wonderous virtues; but never till this moment could I think that you could floop fo low as to take . notice of my wretchedness. My sad story is s no more than this-I was torn from my house by an officer of your army; I was hurried away to the camp by him, and there insulted by the base offers of his love; but Heaven delivered " me from him. Your general heard of my diftress, and rescued me from his power: since which time I have had no personal cause of complaint, befide the indifcriminate calamity of the wars, which have robbed me of my hufband, and left me a friendlefs widow in the ' hands of my enemies.'—A flood of tears here stopped her utterance.

The king, raising her from the ground, proceeded thus!: 'A widow, madam, did you say.' How long fince have you lost your husband, and by

what means did you hear of his death?'

Gire! (replied she) as soon as I was freed from the horrours of brutal violence by the general, I wrote to my husband, with his permission, but received no answer to many, very many letters. This suspence was worse than death, and almost drove me to despair; till the general at length, in compassion to my misery, wrote himself to the commander of the army in which my husband had served, who returned him for answer that he had been killed about the time I was taken prisoner. O! happy had been my lot had I shared his fate!

· I hope

I hope, madam (faid the king) you have received no injuries, that make you weary of life: I hope my general has not misbehaved him-

felf to you.'

O, fire! (replied she) I have received no injuries befides the irreparable loss of my hufband, after which I can have no defire to live. As for the general, he has always treated me with the greatest compassion and tenderness. But now, will your majesty hear the voice of af-' fliction? will you grant the only wish of an heart 'in despair? let me be conveyed to some religious house, where I may devote the sad remnant of ' my days to the service of Heaven, far from the 'knowledge of the general and every other person who has ever heard of my name. I am fenfible of the prefumption of troubling you with this ' request; but to whom should we fly in the mo-' ment of distress except to Heaven, or its vicegerents, especially those whose virtues give its seal ' to their authority.'

You may depend (returned the king) upon every endeavour of my power to make you happy. But, madam, what meant the particular mention of the general, in your defire of being retired from the knowledge of the world? Pray, be ingenuous; I hope he has not tranfgressed the limits of his own virtue and my

command.

coherencies of distraction: the general has always treated me with respect and tenderness: tenderness in excess, for nothing can be hid from you, was the only thing my soul could disapprove of his behaviour. He offered me honourable love; but, alas, my husband! my dead husband has possession of this heart! there he is buried! nor ever shall another love disturb

his dear rememberance.'

'Madam, be comforted (returned the king;)

fuch virtue as your's is the peculiar care of Hea-

ven; you may be happy yet; your husband may be still alive: in the disorders of these unhappy

times many strange things happen: many who are thought to be alive are long fince dead; many who have been long thought dead are found to

be alive.'— O fire! what can your words im-

port? you would not jest with misery! you cannot fpeak in vain! O, am I yet to hope after so long despair?— Hope! always hope! but I shall

fend a proper person to explain my words.

Saying this, the king went to the door of his tent, and, seeing her husband bursting with anxiety and impatience, he called, Go (said he) in there, and see what blessings Heaven reserves for

virtue; go in alone; fuch meltings of the foul as must attend your meeting are too delicate to

be exposed to other eyes.'

Then turning to the General, 'You have behaved nobly, my friend (faid he) in such
temptation, which was almost too great for human virtue! had you injured such excellence,
dear as you are to my heart, your life should have

expiated the crime. But you have behaved nobly; in such a tryal it is virtue to refrain from vice; the errors you have fallen into are but the

weaknesses of nature; for to have been insenfible to her beauty and perfections would have

argued a deficiency in humanity.—But, beware,
my friend, of indulging those passions; they enervate the heart, and wean the soul insensibly from

virtue; the example is before thine eyes; fee how

how the violence of love has been able to urge the noble heart of this woman's husband to de-

fert his charge, to enter into the service of his

enemies, to fight against the dictates of his own

conscience: think of this, and be more cautious

for the future: the heart of a foldier has not

" room for love."

The general, unable to reply, threw himself at his feet, and embraced his knees. 'I understand 'you (said the king, smiling) your passion is 'not quite cured; but you shall have employment to wear off this rust of idleness: return to your command this moment, and expect my further orders.'

The general obeyed, and the king addressing those around him, 'To be without fault (said he) 'were not to be a man; he is the best who has the smallest; and allowance is to be made for human frailty, where the temptation is too great for human virtue.'

As the king said this, the stranger and his wife came out together, and, throwing themselves at his seet, bedewed them with tears of grateful extasy: 'Arise (said the monarch) and be happy in each other. I have restored you to your wise, (said he to the husband) and am ready to do you every further instance of justice which you can 'demand.'

'My foul is fatisfied, O gracious king; my foul is fatisfied (replied he:) I ask no more of Heaven, but to reward your goodness, your ju-

" flice, and compassion."

But there is one thing more to be confidered (faid the king;) your estate was wasted; your house burned by my soldiers; I do not know the loss you may have suffered: take this (giv-

ing

ing him a large purse of gold) if that is not sufficient to repair it, when Heaven, in mercy to

mankind shall bid the calamites of war to cease,

if my life is spared, come to me and I will remove every cause of your complaint. I do not

ask you to enter into my service in this war, but
if your honour, your conscience, oppose it not,
you may expect every encouragement due to

your merit.'

O fire! it is too much! your goodness overwhelms me! I will retire from the seat of war!

I will implore Heaven for your happiness and fafety; and though I cannot, may not, fight for you, my arm shall never more be raised against

· you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the king no less happy in being the authour of their happiness, than his goodness and bounty had made them. --- I here quitted the service of this great prince, being in the purfe which he gave to the stranger. happiness which this pair experienced, in being thus unexpectedly reftored to each other, is not to be expressed; the delicacy of their love being as much too sublime for description, as the senfuality of other scenes is beneath it. In a word, they wanted, they wished for nothing more, and, to secure the possession of what they enjoyed, they resolved to go and live privately with his brother, an ecclefiaftick in Vienna, till the war should be at an end, and they shight with safety return into their own country. This resolution was foon taken; they applied for passports that evening, and left the camp the next morning. Sick

Sick as I was of fuch a scene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I see you are desirous that I should give you a character of him; but I must not gratify your curiofity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that he is the greatest of men: but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgement from his past, for his future life. Success may elevate; misfortune may sour his mind; and so overthrow that equality of it, which now raises him almost above man. enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly steady enough to be relied on: fo that his dependence is folely on the attachment of his own subjects, and the strength of his own foul.

What will be the event of his fortune is not permitted me to conjecture: this only I must say, that, if he falls, it had been better for his country, for Europe in general, that he had never been born; as his struggles will exhaust their strength, and leave them an easy prey to a soe (the Turks) whose silence makes them not apprehensive of him, but who laughs in his heart to see them thus do his work, and destroy against each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A design which he certainly meditates, and will not lose a moment to put into execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL arrives at VIENNA, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in England. He is sent to PERU. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to Europe to prepare matters better.

If the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress: but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflexion, which every object added horrows to. The lands laid waste; the villages in ashes; the inhabitants perishing in the fields and high roads, of wounds, sickness, famine, and every various kind of misery, which the madness of human nature can instict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to Vienna, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace.

The moment I saw this ecclesiastick, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I belonged in *Peru*. This unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised

a curiofity to know the cause of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him settled in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford.

It was not long before this curiofity was gratified; for, the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to a walk in his garden, and, sitting down under a tree on the brink of a fountain,

addressed him thus:

'It is many years, my dearest brother, fince I had the happiness of seeing you last. Various have been the climates I have gone through! various the viciffitudes of my fortune fince that day! from despair to exultation! from royal affluence and power to apprehension of perishing by famine, or in a prison. Wonder not at my words; I will explain them to you in a thort view of my life, which it is necessary I should ' give you, to prepare you for the participation of fecrets, in which your affiftance may be employed ' in establishing the most extensive and firm power which ever yet was raised upon this globe. - You ' may remember, though you were then very young, that the representations of the Fefuit, to ' whose care our education was committed, made ' fuch an impression on me, that, indespite of my father's threats and entreaties, I renounced my patrimony in your favour, and, taking only a small sum of money to defray the expenses of my journey, went directly to Rome with my tutor, where I readily obtained admission into the Society of Jesus, as soon as I had gone through the usual preparatory forms of education.

Nothing remarkable happened to me during the first years of my being professed, my studies Vol. 11.

engroffing my whole time and attention; in which I made fuch a proficiency, that the gee neral of the order thought it proper to fend me

into the world, in the service of the society. · The first stage of my mission was to England, whither I went, to counteract the poison which was dispensing against us, by an apostate of our order, who, under the pretense of employing his abilities in the fervice of the fociety, had been admitted to all the libraries, and fuffered to take extracts from all the records of the church. But one fooner had he made fuch a collection as he thought sufficient for his purpose, than he fled to · England, his native country, where, renouncing his vows and religion, he turned the weapons which had been entrusted in his hands for the defense of the church against her, employing ' the abstracts he had made to the defamation of ' the character, and subversion of the power, of the Holy See.

' My success in this my first negociation (for, in defiance of truth, reason, conscience, and

common fense, by plausible infinuations, by · forged certificates, or, which was the same thing, by certificates from people who would

certify any thing in their own favour, against a man who attacked the very fundamentals of

' their power; by bribery, subornation, perjury, and every kind of artifice, I, in a great measure,

defeated his defign, and overturned the authority of his work;) my fuccess, I say, in this difficult

undertaking, for he had gone out from among ourfelves, and was verfed in our whole science,

encouraged the order to continue me in that

· The

' mission, but in an higher office.

The laws, religion, and government of the nation were now the objects assigned to my attacks, in which I laboured with various success for some years, in every character which human volubility could assume. I was a quaker; a methodist; a deist; I wrote for the ministry, or against the government, as the prevailing humour of the day promised attention to my writings. The sea which slows around that island being not more unsteady than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable to be russed by the winds of heaven, than they are by every breath of popular rumour.

I proceeded thus for fome time, with various fuccess, till, happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissension between the people and their governours, to the ruin of both, the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by slight from an ignominious death, which the resentment of

those, whose ruinous machinations I had thus

discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to.

'My failing in this attempt, in which thoufands had failed before me, was no prejudice to
my character, nor in the least lessened me in the
opinion of the order. On the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid,
and so well conducted, that I was now judged a
proper person to be employed in greater matters.
I was therefore sent, the next year, to what
is called the Spanish world, but is really the fe-

· fuits heaven in America, where matters of the highest moment were just ripe for execution. When I came there, I found things in a forward-* ness too great for their foundation; the eagerness of fome of our people hurrying on events before proper preparation had enfured their fuccefs. In short, they were ready to revolt from Spain and · Portugal, before they had made provision to support themselves in such an attempt. wanted European officers, foldiers, arms, and ammunition, for on the natives there is no dependence; but, above all, the time was unfavourable. The powers they meant to attack in this vital part were at peace with all the world, and confequently at liberty to turn their whole force against them. I, therefore, counselled them to moderate their

zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a
more favourable minute, should make their success more probable. But they would not hearken
to my advice, but attributed it to envy, or want
of resolution: on which I lest them to their
own ill fortune, and hasted home to provide a
remedy for evils which I could not prevent.

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shows the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN and PORTUGAL are to be brought into the war with ENGLAND. He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular design.

HE event has confirmed my opinion; by striking too soon, the blow has been ineffectual. However, things, though disconcerted by this precipitancy, are not quite ruined; and care may yet repair the effects of their folly. In this cause I now labour, in concert with others of my brethren in every court of Europe; and I have the fatisfaction to think that we have a prospect of success. The only obstacle that retards us at prefent is, the difficulty of making the courts of Spain and Portugal enter into the war against England. Could we bring this to bear, our work would be easy. The mighty naval power of England will not only prevent their fending over forces to oppress us before we can establish our power, but will also assist us to carry on the war, to share in the spoil, and di-

But, while the present kings are on the thrones of those kingdoms, it will be scarcely possible to bring our designs to perfection, they are so utterly averse to hazarding the consequences of a war with a nation from whose alliance they receive such advantages.—The

fress our enemies.

first thing, therefore, which we do, must be to

· remove them. The former has already swallowed

his death, though the process will be so slow as to escape suspicion. With the other such caution

is not necessary, nor is there time for it: the arm is already lifted up against him, for a stroke

' that will terrify the world.

When these obstacles are removed, the execution of our defigns will meet with no further delay. The fuccessors to these princes we have · fecured fuch an influence on, that we can work them to whatever we please, and have already · poisoned their minds with prejudices against

England *. To provide officers of approved fidelity and experience to command our forces, is the next object of our care. Shall I candidly own to ' you, that fuch a length of time and multiplicity of affairs had almost obliterated all my rememberance of my family; but, the moment I heard · your name mentioned with the respect due to · your merits in the present war, a flood of infant fondness melted my heart, and tears of tenderest · joy acknowledged that I had a brother. I im-· mediately gave notice to our general, and by his · order am empowered to treat thus with you.

· On my engagement for your fidelity (for your abilities are known to be far superiour to any that ' shall oppose you) I am commissioned to offer you the supreme command of all our forces in this

great undertaking. With what joy I make this · offer, the pleafure that you would feel in ferving

· your brother can best enable you to judge. Though

* The conduct of the present King of Spain, hitherto, shows that the Jesuit had formed a wrong opinion of him at least.

199

Though I will tell you further, that mine is raised higher than common feelings can convey a notion of. I have hitherto only unfolded the general design of our order, in which I am but a party, though a principal and material one. But shall I tell you also, that my designs terminate not with their's: as your command will make you master of all their force; and, as power is the consequence of that, you will be able to confer it where you please; or, indeed, rather to retain it in your own hands, while I shall only ease you of the trouble of conducting and establishing the policy of an infant state.

This was my motive for writing to you fo pressingly to come to me to Vienna. This is the end which I have been labouring for all my life. I am advanced in years, and shall never marry to beget an heir; you are young, and will have many. Assist me, therefore, to acquire a throne which must descend to your posterity—a throne, which, by holding it at first as under the sovereignty of the order, will soon be established by them, even beyond their own power to shake.

'I have now unbosomed myself to my brother,
with all the confidence of so near an alliance.
You will, perhaps, wonder at my openness with
one whom I have not seen since he was a child.
But I know your character in life; and, above
all, I know myself safe from being betrayed, because the information would not be received.
Consider therefore whether you will embrace

Consider, therefore, whether you will embrace this offer; whether you will reign in a splendour that will dazzle the eyes of the greatest prince in Europe, or live here in slavery and dependence! The alternative will not admit a moment's hesitation: I see you yield. I will actually a quaint

quaint our general with it; you and your wife

fhall remain here with me, till the proper time for all our departure comes, which will depend

on circumstances not yet settled. In the mean

time we shall have an opportunity of conferring on these subjects together, and preparing all

things for our undertaking in a manner that

fhall enfure success.'

Though my master made no reply to this proposal that testified the least disapprobation of it, I could easily see that many parts of the scheme as fected him with the strongest abhorrence; at the same time that the offer of royalty was a temptation which shook his resolution, and almost vanguished his virtue.

His brother faw the conflict in his heart with pleasure: had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he should have withdrawn his confidence from such a depravity of soul; and the struggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman, who delibe-

rates between virtue and vice is loft,

CHAP. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to show the rise of the war in GERMANY, and explains the motives of the feveral parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.

HE Jesuit the next evening resumed the conversation, and, to remove every doubt of fuccess that might deter his brother from join-

ing in his defigns, proceeded thus: My brother! (faid he) there is nothing fo difgusting to a rational man as the mistakes and blunders which passion, prejudice, pride, and ignorance produce in the conduct of all the courts in the world, even our's at Rome not being quite exempt from them, though the freest of all others. As for this of Vienna, it is, at opresent, a scene where every absurd, every deftructive passion rules.—Among these must you feek for the fources of the present war that lays all Germany waste: Female pride, picqued by some slighting expressions from one esteemed inferiour in rank, and stimulated by a desire of recovering by furprise what had been yielded, or rather extorted, by treaty, influenced this fagacious court, in conjunction with that of Saxony, to form defigns against the King of Bulgaria. But the vigilance of that monarch prevented their defigns, of which he had timely notice; and, before their schemes were ripe for execution, he boldly attacked them, and so anticipated the blow meditated against him. · So K 5

· So daring a step surprised all Europe, and in-· fluenced many who were unacquainted with the ' motives of it to take part against him, while · more did for private advantage. Of these · France was the first; who, concluding a league with her ancient enemy, in despite of family ani-' mosity, has entered into a war that seems not to concern her at all; nor, indeed, does it in the obvious consequences of it. But she has further defigns in view; and, in return for the affiftance • the gives to crush this prince, is to receive from • the House of Austria those dominions in the Ne-· therlands, which have cost the greatest part of · Europe fuch deluges of blood for above a century to keep out of her hands: while this court, inattentive to the confequences that must attend France's getting possession of these long contested places, has blindly, basely entered into · a league with a family that has been labouring her ruin for fo many ages, and betrayed the · confidence of all the states who have supported her in them.——The other nations who have · acceded to this alliance have acted from motives · merely mercenary in the first view, fighting for • the pay promised them by the Imperial and French courts, the latter of whom has stretched her ge-* nerofity fo far, as to undertake supporting her " new ally with money as well as men. But it is not improbable that they may all • be disappointed, and the King of Bulgaria not only escape the ruin meditated against him, but also retort it on the machinators; one of the · principal of whom, the Saxon, has already had

abundant cause to repent of his undertaking. As
for this court, it now fights pro aris & focis, as
may be said; for if that hero is victorious, no

6 thing

thing less is to be expected here, than the total · loss of the imperial dignity, of whose authority there want not many inflances of the most fla-

grant abuse, to vindicate such a revolution. But, of all the effects of this unnatural combination, there is not one more base than the ingratitude with which this court has behaved to that of England, whose blood and treasure have often supported it against the very power of France, when every other human affistance had deferted it; and established it in its present grandeur, almost at the price of its own ruin .-

But now all those benefits are forgot; and because England will not tamely look on (if not, perhaps, affift) to fee the fabrick, which she has

erected at so vast an expense, overturned to gratify a blind caprice, and a prince, allied to her

by blood and interest, sacrificed by avarice and opride, all her former fervices are held as cancelled, and herself treated with the rancour of

the greatest enemy.

While England thus supports her character of generofity, and acts with prudence, the Dutch, as if infatuated, stand quietly to see the barrier, which cost themselves even so much in erecting for their defense, thus given away to the very opower against whom it was erected; and who, they cannot be insensible, means nothing less than their ruin, as foon as it can strike the blow, to effect. But, such is the degeneracy of that e people from every fentiment of virtue, publick and private, that they will not give up the opportunity of present gain, to save their state from so evident, so imminent ruin; vainly, perhaps, expecting that England will still pursue the fchemes of knight-errantry which have fo long K 6

made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours, while they themselves looked on almost as if unconcerned in the event; and will be moved by the cries of the distressed states to remedy the mistakes, and repair the losses of their

· High-Mightinesses.

While every other state in Europe is thus employed, Spain and Portugal enjoy all the advantages of peace, prudently taking no part in a war which does not in the least concern them. · Of these, the former, like the old lion in the fable, is only terrible to ignorant apprehension on account of what it has been, and is now pacifick and harmless, because it no longer has the power of doing harm. Sensible of this weakness, it · fleeps in the shadow of a mighty name, and mixes ont in disputes which must only draw it into difficulties, without any prospect of advantage to engage it in the attempt. But it must not be · let to enjoy this state of tranquillity, so contrary to our defigns, any longer; and, as the prefent government there is determined to perfift in the measures that support it, it must be overturned to make way for those who will be more obedient to our advice. A method which we must also pursue with Portugal; for, though its strength is almost beneath the rank of an independent, much less a royal state, yet, upon the account of its wealth, which might hire forces to oppress us, it must be worked up to take the fame step, and break with England, as I have faid before, to which it has already made large advances, by feveral most unjust and injudicious encroachments on the trade of that nation.

As for the war between France and England, it arises folely from the contradictions between the interest of the two nations, which nature has fet in an opposition impossible to be reconciled. But the feat of this war is fo remote from hence, that it would have no influence on the affairs of Europe, did not the successes of the · English prevent France from giving the affistance that was expected, and might be effectual to the defigns of this court, for they have so absolutely ruined her trade, that she is no longer able to fulfil her engagements with Russia particularly, and the feveral courts of Germany, whom she undertook to pay, for fighting the quarrel of her ally; fo that the former, who had no other motive but the money for entering into the war at first, will of course, and the latter must of neceffity, defert that cause, not having any internal support of their own, fince this has failed them. Indeed the Russians, finding all the ' mighty promises which were made them vanish ' into air, begin to be fick of their bargain already, and long again for the folid advantages of their alliance with England. As for this court, it is now making its last effort, and, if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other resource, than shamefully to receive the law from a prince, ' upon whom it made so unjust an attempt.'

CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. Chrysal changes his service.

HIS short but distinct view of the prefent fituation of the affairs of Europe must ' convince you, that a general peace must foon be concluded, the parties that would not being able ' to continue the war much longer; and therefore we must be speedy in the execution of our defigns, or the opportunity will be loft, for it would be impossible to make even the pride of Spain, or the avarice of Portugal, take the measures we want at a time when England is difengaged from other enemies. I have drawn this sketch to show you, that our defigns are not rashly under taken, but the refult of the deepest know-· ledge and infight into things. This must re-· move every scruple that may arise from doubt of fuccess. But there is one thing more, which · must be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our undertaking in a wrong light to you; and this is to evince the justice of it, and of the means · defigned to accomplish its success.-

Of this matter you must not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules obtruded by design upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wise man observes, who has it in his power to break

6 them

them with impunity.—Man is thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his own happiness by every means within his power: this is too sublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion by which the wife few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance

and subjection.

But that it is really the truth, and as such made the rule of action by all the states and princes in the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by any one who has considered the systems of policy and government which are, and ever have been, established by them.

For if it was not an undoubted maxim, that power constitutes the rule of justice, how incon-

fistent would be the actions of all mankind?

How could a state devise laws to punish the man

with death, who goes into his neighbour's field, and steals his ox, and, at the same time, sends

armies to invade, spoil, and depopulate the territories of their neighbours? How could a poor

fleets immediately after fent avowedly to destroy

the whole trade of the same nation? If a state of war is alledged, that is the very imposition of

which I spoke. Every man has as good a natural right to declare war with his neighbour, as

the state he lives in has with another state; and every right that is not natural is an usurpation,

and void. This is the true philosophy of life,

fripped of the idle dreams of enthusiasm, and felsish misrepresentations of design.

As for religion, look over the whole race of mankind, and try if you can find one who prac-

tises what he professes: this is an incontestible

proof, that none believe it; as it is also, that

there is no necessity they should, else would the want of faith and obedience be punished by that • power which is thought to enjoin them; whereas, on the contrary, it is always most fuccessful, as it affords means which those restraints forbid. I observed, that in the beginning of our conversation on this subject, you seemed 6 shocked at my mentioning the necessity of removing the persons who oppose our designs, and e particularly when I faid the Spaniard had swal-· lowed his death. But this is all prejudice, and want of extending your view beyond the furface

of things. · For how much better is the method we take, of striking the single person against whom our defign is levelled, than that purfued, not only without reproach, but even encouraged by applause, of involving the innocent with the guilty ' (innocent I mean in respect to us) and laying waste whole nations to bring a prince to death? · How much better would it have been for this court to have removed the king of Bulgaria by opoison, or a dagger, than to have destroyed millions, as they have done, in the pursuit of his death, by this destructive war? This is demonfration! this is conviction to him who dares open his eyes to fee it! Judge now of our undertaking by this invariable fystem, and show me

one objection to it.'

This long differtation was not delivered at one time; it was the substance of many conversations, by which the Jesuit so wrought upon his brother, that he refigned himself wholly to his disposal, and The only obentered fincerely into his defigns. jection he made (and that was not urged against him) was, to being any way concerned in the compendious compendious warfare of the fociety, the prejudice of education being still so strong with him, that he could not yet abstract things so nicely, as to consider assassination in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this state of speculation about a week, for my master never stirred out, as he made sickness his excuse for quitting the service, when his brother having occasion for some money to send to Lisbon, on the grand design, the bag in which I was, was ordered for that service; the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it.—I now changed my master again, and set out for Lisbon, in the possession of one of the society, who was to deliver us to a particular person there.

House, and the supplementation of the property of the

CHAP. XI.

relegation the my too t

CHRYSAL proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of GERMANY. A short view of the war between the FRENCH and ENGLISH, with the motives of the former for transferring the seat of it into GERMANY. Instidious ambition meets a just disappointment.

IN fo complicated an undertaking, there necessarily must be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whose motions depends the success of the whole. The person by whom I was sent to Liston, was not to go directly thither, but to take a large circuit, and call at several places in his way, to see that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy should not defeat the design a second time.

It is not necessary to recount all the circumflances of this tour, which, for the most part, were no more than the common occurrences upon such occasions; I shall, therefore, take notice only of such few, as, for their singularity, and importance, may deserve attention. As to the secret motive of the journey (for that alledged was only to inspect, as usual, into the private concerns of the order) it has been already so well explained, that it is sufficient to say every thing exceeded expectation, expectation, and gave the strongest assurance of success.

As the war had overspread all Germany, it was impossible for my master to avoid falling in with some of the armies, which were then in the field; but this gave him no concern: he was blessed with one of those ready geniuses, that can put on any appearance so naturally, as to deceive suspicion itself; beside, that he had passports, under one character or another, from every power engaged in the war.

The first event worth remark that occurred to us (for the nature of war and its operations in general have been sufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the king of Bulgaria, into which my master entered, in the character of a Jewish agent. This army was composed of the forces of several of the smaller German states (who were hired by the English, to defend their own liberties) a small number of Bulgarians, and a considerable body of English

troops.

You are surprised to hear, that people should require to be paid to fight for themselves in so interesting a cause; but so it is; and so it will continue to be, while a number of little sovereigns assume the state, and live in the luxury of the greatest kings; for, as their own revenues are insufficient to support the expense, they will be ready to sell themselves to the first that offers, for an immediate supply, without looking forward to, or regarding the consequences of, such inconsiderate, such wretched venality. They have, indeed, this excuse, which the general depravity of mankind seems to justify their alledging, that, as their ruin would involve greater states in some inconveniencies.

niencies, they find these will rather submit to this grossimposition, than suffer them to be swallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Base as such a prostitution of principle must appear, it has been so successfully practised (and this not by those poor princes alone, the Austrians and Spaniards occasionally, and the Dutch constantly availing themselves of it) that England in particular has been drawn in to bear a part, from which, by her situation, she seemed exempted by Heaven, in every war that has distracted Europe for some ages, to an expense of blood and treasure, which is already severely felt, and must, if pursued much farther, involve it in the

very ruin it thus strives to avert.

There is one, and one only remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itself shall work its own redrefs—a period, that, to human forefight, feems not far distant at present. is taking away the power of these petty tyrants, who difgrace the name of fovereign, and uniting their territories into one state, of strength sufficient to support itself. For, while those princes have any power left, they will, confiftently with their present systems of policy, oppose this; but the manner in which they have conducted themselves in this war, if not speedily altered, will so effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to refift, but must passively submit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their fupport: an event as much to be defired by their own immediate subjects, as by the other states, which thus fuffer by their abfurd and iniquitous conduct; as the severest form of one government is preferable

able to the capricious rule of several tyrants, whose poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the most of their wretched people, without any regard to the established rules of justice, or even the common rights of humanity. The usual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of Germany, which they make so great a noise about, is of no weight; that boasted liberty being, at present, no more than the power of those sovereigns to treat their subjects as they please, with impunity, the restraining of which within just bounds would really be establishing, not overturning, the liberty of mankind.

As to the war in which the English were at this time engaged, it was not be ascribed solely to this cause. The insatiable ambition of the French had prompted them to strive for the enlargement of their territories in America, where they already possessed an hundred times more than they were able to make any use of. The posfessions of the English in that part of the globe were also uselessly extensive; however, the boundaries having been fettled between them, ufurpations were not to be tolerated, confiftently with the honour of the state; beside, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might, in time, possibly be extended to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between those powerful and jealous neighbours, the feat of which was properly transferred, by the English, to the place in which the attack had been made upon them; where the superiority of their naval force gave them such advantages, that they not only recovered the places which which had been taken from them, but also absolutely overturned the French power in those boundless regions, and pursued their conquests in every other part of the world where the French had made settlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.

As it was impossible for the French to recover these losses directly, and the ambition and avarice which first gave occasion to the war was now strengthened by pride, to prevent their making the concessions on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the feat of the war into Germany, and attacked certain powers there, with whom England was so inseparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their affiftance, in expectation of having all their own losses restored, in return for these territories, if they could get possession of them, which the number of their own land-forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal Germans, gave them hopes of accomplishing; a scheme not ill-founded, as every motive of honour and justice obliged the English to protect and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus folely upon their account. As the French, at the same time that they made this attack, had also entered into the confederacy against the king of Bulgaria, as has been already mentioned, this necessarily cemented the alliance between him and England still closer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could possibly spare to the army raised by the English, upon this indispensable occasion; from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that his army engaged the attention of the French, and prevented their joining

ing their forces to the number of his enemies; beside a considerable assistance in money, to en-

able him to support his own troops.

It was necessary for me to give you this short explanation of the nature of this war, though such digressions are contrary to my design and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgement of the extraordinary occurrences I am going

to relate to you.

The army through which my master was obliged to pass, as I have said, though paid by England, and the slower of it composed of Britons, was commanded by a German general, in disgraceful acknowledgement of the want of military merit equal to such a charge in the natives: though, to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the English, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and subject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the German commander in chief.

Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial than the inconveniences they were meant to prevent. Accustomed to live in the most luxurious plenty and ease, and valuing themselves upon the riches of their country, which supported the whole army, the English found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the German troops, with whom they were joined, with contempt; who, in return, as fected to despise their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country to give such impressions of them, as prevented the people from bringing them in provisions,

provisions, with that care and chearfulness which their prompt and generous payment deserved; by which means they suffered the inconveniencies of scarcity and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though fuch feuds among the men threatened the most dangerous consequences, those whose authority ought to put a stop to them were far from striving to restore that harmony, which alone could give success to their designs. The commander in chief either overlooked, as beneath his notice, or was prevented, by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of those misunderstandings; and the English commander, ambitious probably of the supreme command, which he imagined he might easily obtain, if he could make the other sufficiently obnoxious to the English, instand them by every artistice he could use.

Nor did he stop here: whenever he was summoned, in consequence of his high station, for he was second in command in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his constant practice to contradict whatever was proposed by the commander, and to treat all his schemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himself in their place; and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful speaker, and perfectly versed in the theory of war; whereas the commander was a thoughtful, reserved man, of sew words, whose whole life had been spent in action, and who could more easily have executed than explained his designs.

The consequences of this disagreement were very detrimental while it lasted, and must, in the end, have proved fatal to the army, had not the German, without ever attempting to discuss the affair with his wordy antagonist, written directly to the British sovereign, to inform him that he was fo constantly opposed in all his defigns by the English general, that it was impossible for him to do any thing of moment; wherefore he defired either that he might have leave to refign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous opposition, concluding his letter with these remarkable words: 'Though ' in a multitude of counsellors there is said to be " much fafety, yet, in the operations of war, if many are privy to the councils which direct them, there never can be that fecrefy, agreement, and despatch, which are indispensably necessary to success.'-

The monarch, who was no stranger to the captious and unquiet disposition of the English general, was sensible of the justice of the German's complaint, and immediately removed the cause of it, by giving him an unlimited power to carry on the war as it should appear best to his own private judgement, without consulting with, or being li-

able to be opposed by, any other person.

It may be thought, that the entire removal of the English general would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the English government made this not quite so proper, as he was descended from one of the most illustrious and powerful families in the kingdom, and a member of the senate, in which his talent for speaking gave him such weight, that it was judged best to avoid giving him cause for exerting

of the government, by removing him from an employment which he had follicited with all his power and interest; especially as the immense expense of this army began to make the people uneasy, and ready to receive any impression against it. But the event showed that this caution was inessectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it

was made use of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the German general received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his schemes without ever consulting any person, or even communicating the least hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he fent his orders with the peremptory precision of an absolute sovereign. This was a fevere stroke upon the English general, who had been accustomed to canvass the very commands of his king, and, therefore, could badly brook fuch subordination to a person whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his understanding. However, as it was in vain to dispute, he obeyed in sullen silence, refolved to feife the first opportunity of defeating his measures, since he could no longer disconcert his councils; and to take hold of the least miscarriage, to attack him in the British senate at the end of the campain, where he doubted not but he should be able to represent things in such a light, as to have him removed from the command, which must of course devolve upon him-

This account my master received from a Jefuit the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the society the more effectually with the French king, and secure his interest and protection, should any unforeseen accident deseat their design, had entered into the service of the English general, as his valet de chambre, for the better opportunity of discovering the schemes of the allies, which he gave constant intelligence of to their enemies.

CHAP, XII.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy English soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign to a publick tryal. His hopes are again disappointed, and he consirms his own ruin.

THE very morning after my master's arrival in the camp, an event happened that astonished all Europe. The French army was so greatly superiour to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely upon the defensive; nor had his consummate experience and indefatigable assiduity been able to prevent their taking several advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat that seemed to threaten the loss of the country he was to defend. But, through all these difficulties, he persisted steadily in his own plan, and preserved his attention cool, and ready to take any advantage that might offer.

L 2 Accordingly,

friend.

Accordingly, that morning, upon notice of some motions of the enemy that indicated a defign of attacking him, he ordered a small, but select body of forces, almost all of them English, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, while he should make a proper disposition of the rest of his army to give the enemy battle, or make a secure retreat, as he should see expedient; but the unexampled behaviour of those few brave troops foon changed the face of the affair; for, not fatisfied with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them in their turn, which they did with fuch irrefistible valour, that the French were thrown into confusion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have faid before, that the transactions in a battle are so complicated, and consounded with each other, that it is impossible to reduce them into the regularity of a satisfactory description; I shall, therefore, enter no farther into the account of this, than just as it concerns the conduct of the English general, which I had a sufficient opportunity of observing, my master having placed himself near his person, in company with his

The moment the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops which he had ordered to march toward the enemy, he fent to the English general, who commanded all the horse in that wing, to advance and sustain them. It is impossible to describe his situation, when a messenger from the general informed him, that a part of the army was engaged in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry

cavalry under his command to their affistance. Surprise and resentment at such a measure's being taken, without his having the least previous notice of it, almost deprived him of his reason; but he recovered himself in a moment, and drawing his sword with an air of indignation and discontent, was just preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another messenger arrived, and de-

livered them, but with some variation.

This the general instantly perceived, and refolved to take advantage of, to justify his obeying: neither, in hopes, by that means, to accomplish his scheme of defeating the measures of his commander, without any regard to the consequences that must attend such a conduct. Accordingly, instead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the messengers about this difference in their orders, and, finding each positive in those he delivered, he coolly determined to go himself to the general for an explanation of them; by trifling away the critical moment in which manner he expected that the part of the allied army which was engaged would be beaten for want of a proper and timely support, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and faving the whole army from a defeat, and the pleasure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his designs to them in proper time.

Such a scheme was but too likely to succeed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus designed to have sacrificed to his ambition and resentment, disappointed it beyond all human

L 3 probability,

probability, as I have observed before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext to abandon them to ruin.

The fituation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than described. The cool distant reception he met with gave him notice of the storm which was ready to burst over his head; and he saw that the scheme he had laid so deeply to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accusations which he had intended to bring against his general would now recoil upon himself with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the general next morning publickly passed an implicit censure on his conduct, which he saw received with such universal approbation, that he thought it proper to resign his command, for fear of personal insult from the incensed soldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt but the interest of his family, and his own eloquence and address, would vindicate his character at least, if not still accomplish his designs against the general.

Though I lost fight of him at this time, yet, as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of the whole affair, I think it better, and less trouble to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in

another place.

The first construction which was put upon his conduct was, that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper to those under his command gave no small weight

to, from this generally just maxim, that the cruel are always cowards; and which many infignificant parts of his former conduct were alledged to confirm: but I have shown that it sprang from another much less justifiable cause; I say, less justifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for than for his being born blind or lame; but such a scheme as his was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the

blackest circumstances.

The first consequence of his quitting the army was a perfect harmony between the English and Germans; the glory they had acquired upon this occasion raising the spirits of the former so high, that they thought no more of the inconveniencies they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved, and entered into friendship with their fellow-foldiers, as if there had never been any jealoufy between them; who, on the other hand, were fo struck with their gallant behaviour, and so sensible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accused them of improper delicacy, or strove to do them ill offices with the natives of the country, as before. But what completed the happiness of the English, was the commander in chief's indulging their natural thirst for glory under their present commander, by giving them the post of honour upon all occasions, and taking publick notice of their valour, the honour of which they esteemed a sufficient recompense for the severest fatigues and dangers: an indulgence which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always opposed their being ex-L4

posed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater consequence than the rest of the army, or joined it only to make a si-

gure, and not to do any fervice.

As foon as the late general arrived in England, his fovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many very lucrative and honourable employments, and dismissed him his service; an instance of clemency which sew other princes would have shown, and which regard to the merits of his illustrious ancestors alone procured for him.

But so far was he from having a proper sense of this lenity, or acquiescing in the sentence of his sovereign, that he loudly afferted his being wronged, and demanded a tryal, to vindicate his character, with all the assurance of conscious in-

nocence.

This was the highest insult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his justice, and questioned his power in the tenderest point. However, he scorned to take any advantage of it, but, waving every personal resentment, condescended to grant the tryal demanded; but with this express declaration, that, as it was at the instance of the party, and without any legal necessity, he should abide by the sentence of his judges, be it what it would, as he would never interfere further. But this declaration was of little weight, for the general was well advised, before he follicited the tryal, that, according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a Briton subject to military law, by which he must be

tried; and this exemption was the real reason of

his being fo eager for a tryal.

But, though his life might be out of danger by this fubterfuge, the tryal completed the ruin of his character beyond all possibility of recovery, as, upon the most impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious consequences of it, by the loss of fo favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and, perhaps, putting an end to the war, by that means appeared fo plainly, that the justice of his being dismissed the fervice was not only afferted, but he was also declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again: and thus he fell, a fecond time, a victim to his own schemes. As to the victory which had been the immediate cause of his ruin, as soon as the circumstances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general loft the glory which, in the first emotions of joy and admiration, had been so lavishly heaped upon him for it; and it was justly ascribed to accident, as human forefight could not possibly have formed any plan for fuch an improbable instance of bravery as that which obtained it.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL arrives at BRUSSELS. The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.

As foon as the confusion of such an event was a little over, and my master thought he could travel in safety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I said, he had bor'n there, pursued his journey to Brussels in his own, where he was to receive further instructions; for, though the great design was carried on by every member of the society, yet the real secret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whose orders the rest obeyed with an implicit exactness, sidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the subjects of any sovereign upon earth, since the days of the old man of the mountain.

It was some time before these instructions arrived; which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, insignificant court, by my master's intimacy with the confessor of the governour, who, besides the advantage of that character to gain information, was himself a man of pleasure in the most extensive sense of the phrase, and utterly free from every restraint of principle that could oppose its gratification; though he had the address to maintain the dignity of his station, by his secresy and regard to propriety of appearance.

There

There is nothing that contributes fo much to the influence which the Jesuits possess over the minds of the people, as their knowledge of the fecret history of their lives. To acquire this, they stop at nothing; they assume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every scene of vicious pleasure, where reserve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without difguife. Such an opportunity of information, therefore, was not to be missed. Accordingly, the evening after my master's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themselves in a convenient situation, to see all the company, and make their remarks without danger of being overheard; fuch as were merely political I shall omit, as I am sick of such a stupid subject, and only take notice of those which may extend your knowledge of the human heart,— 'Observe that little mean-looking, ill-' favoured person' (said the confessor, continuing a conversation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) who acts as master of the ceremonies. · You fee his feeble frame is quite worn out with debauchery, and he nods over the grave in an-' ticipated old age, yet still he affects an air of · levity and youth, and strives to inflame others, by his discourse, to vices which he is no longer able to participate of himself: but this is all grimace; and he assumes this appearance of e gaiety, to hide the gloomy discontent and remorfe that prey upon his heart.

'There is fomething fo particular in the story of this man, that it may be worth while to give you a short sketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring country, where his father, from the low-

eft state of poverty, amassed such wealth in trade,

that his vanity prompted him to get his family ennobled, to hide the meanness of his original. There is something so absurdly wrong in purchased nobility, that it always turns the heads of the purchasers, perhaps in just retribution for so shagrant an abuse of an institution meant as a reward for merit. The ennobled man lived not to show the truth of this observation; but his sons abundantly made up for that, the elder lavishing his wealth on every kind of expensive vanity, and the younger, the person you see, glorying in every kind of debauchery, as if vice and folly were the prerogatives of their honour.

In the course of a life of pleasure he contracted an acquaintance with that lady, whom · you see at the upper end of the room. Though ' nature had never meant him for a man of in-· trigue, and debauchery had exhausted even the ' little powers she gave, he thought it would have been inconfistent with his character of a man of pleasure, not to commence an affair of e gallantry with so desireable a person. Accordingly, as she happened to be married, he directly cultivated an intimacy with her hufband, into whose unguarded confidence he · fo far infinuated himself, as to receive many e acts of friendship from him. To a man who had any fense of honour or honesty, this would have been an irrefiftible reason for desisting from his base design; but he was above such valgar restraints, and genteelly took the opportunity of the husband's friendship to debauch the virtue of the wife.

Nothing but the most abandoned prosligacy in the woman could have given success to such

an attempt, as the husband exceeded the paramour in very natural endowment of mind and person, beyond every degree of comparifon; but the caprice of vicious inclination is onot to be accounted for; it will loath the most

exquisite delicacies, and sate itself on garbage. 'They had not continued their commerce long, when their indifcretion betrayed them. It is impossible to describe the astonishment and rage of the injured husband, at the discovery! Had it been possible, he would have doubted his fenses, which were witnesses to his difgrace. In the first emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge which his fuperiour strength amply put in his power; but a moment's reflexion showed him the folly of fuch an action, and determined him to take the fafer and more fevere revenge of the aw.

· Accordingly, he withdrew without being perceived by them, and bringing some of his fer-' vants to testify their crimes, as soon as he had fecured the proof necessary to obtain his satisfaction, entered the room, in the height of their dalliance, and coolly telling them that it would be proper for them to choose another scene for their pleasure, beside his house, retired, and left

them to their meditations.

'This conduct convinced them of his defign. and that they had not a moment to lofe, to avoid some of the most disagreeable consequences of it: as foon, therefore, as they recovered from the first impressions of their aftonishment, they directly departed together, and concealing the place of their retirement,

for fear of a pursuit, quitted the territories of

the state as foon as they possibly could.

But they might have spared themselves that f trouble; the revenge which the husband fought was of another nature: he directly instituted a fuit at law against them, by which, as he had sufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained a divorce from his wife, and fuch damages against the violator of his bed, as made it impossible for him ever to return to his country, without he defigned to languish out the rest of his days

in a prison.

The lovers, in the mean time, were far from being happy in the uninterrupted enjoyment of each other. Variety and the mystery of intrigue were all that tempted them to the correspondence at first; and now that these were loft, reflexion opened their eyes to the consequences of their folly, and made them · look upon each other as the authours of their mutual ruin. Such thoughts foon cool the most ardent love; what effect then must they have upon persons in their situation? However, neceffity obliged them to conceal their fentiments: and, as foon as the divorce gave them liberty, they married, to preferve the appearance of a passion they never felt, and obtain a support from their families, which they could not have expected on any other terms.

When this was done, and that necessity removed, the aversion which they had long entertained broke out in the most violent man-They lived in a state of eternal warfare, in which the wife threw off all regard to decency, even fo far as to take advantage of her superiour strength, and frequently beat

her

her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his upper lip! the third day of their happy mar-

riage, he received that mark of her rage from

the heel of her slipper, with which she also beat out two of his teeth, whose place he now sup-

plies with artificial ones.

But the viciousness of her inclination, which first brought him into this wretched situation, released him from it sooner than he deserved. They had fixed their residence here, where the prince soon happened to take a liking to her, the first overture of which she eagerly embraced; and completed the infamy of her character, by quitting her second husband to become his missing thres; in which station you behold her at pre-

fires; in which station you behold her at pre-

'Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial retaliation upon the husband, for his own base crime, he was insensible of it; and instead of taking advantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some place where his shame was not

known, meanly accepted of the employment in

which you fee him, and submitted to be the slave

of her vice and infolence.

But though his hatred for her, and passion for the pomp and dissipation of a court, make him

brave the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the constant consequence of debauchery, the faith-

ful monitor of guilt, has awoke his conscience

to a fense of the crime that has sunk him so low, and raised a remorse that wastes his life, though

he thus absurdly strives to drown its voice in

he noise of vanity and vice.'

C H A P. XIV.

do no ill care svisito (Lustra de careta

The confessor entertains Chrysal's master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.

MY master was beginning to make some VI obvious reflexions on this account, but his friend foon diverted his attention to another object. 'Observe' (said he, pointing to a person who bore all the external marks of nobility in his habit and appearance) 'a striking proof of the infignificance of being born to wealth and · honours! Who that fees the despicable figure · which this man makes here, a voluntary exile from his own country, where his rank and fortune placed him in the most exalted and advantageous light, can ever throw away a · moment's thought on heaping up riches, or 6 obtaining honours to perpetuate his name, and e aggrandise his family, the folly and profusion · of a fingle member of which may thus disappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues an aggra-· vation of his own degeneracy and reproach?

vereign, and possessed of a fortune sufficient to
support it with dignity to himself, and benest to the community, did this man enter
into

· In a rank scarce inferior to that of a so-

into life; but a few years of the diffipation of what is falfely called a life of pleasure diffressed

his fortune, and debased his principles, to such

a degree, that he was obliged, and not ashamed, to have recourse to the mean method of a mer-

cenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs, and en-

able him to support the external appearance of

his character.

'The constant consequences of these marriages might be sufficient to open the eyes of the un-

happy victims of them to fuch a dangerous folly;

but vanity possesses so absolute an empire over the female heart, that nothing can prevent the

gratification of it.

The female whom this person pitched upon, as proper for his purpose, on account of her immense wealth, was destitute of every charm of mind and person, to attract or preserve love or esteem. But sew are sensible of their own desciencies, or can bear to be informed of them. On his making the first overture to her, all her real friends took the alarm; they drew his character in proper colours; they showed her, that necessity, not inclination, was the motive of his addresses, and they laid the inevitable consequences of a connexion with such a person before her in the strongest light: but all was in vain! Her heart was fixed upon rank and precedence, and, so she could obtain them, she left

the rest to chance.
Accordingly, as she was absolutely her own mistress, the match was soon made, to the present satisfaction of both parties. He got her fortune, to pay his debts, and pursue his pleasures; and she rode in a coach, with coronets,

and was called ber Grace.

But this mutual happiness did not last long; the moment he got possession of her fortune all his wishes were fulfilled, and, as he had nothing further to expect, he did not think it necessary

for him to continue any appearances of love, or even complaifance, for an object really dif-

agreeable to him. Accordingly, the very morning after his marriage, he fet out, upon a party

of pleasure, with some of his former compainions; and left the bride by herself, to receive the compliments, and go through the farce

· usual on such occasions.

Though such behaviour must appear base and ungenerous to the last degree, yet she had no right to complain of it, as she could not expect any other from his known character, and motives for marriage; she, therefore, put the best face on the matter, and, whether from intoxication at her elevation, or indifference to him, seemed to be insensible of the slight, and went through the ceremony and parade with all the appearance of pleasure and content, leaving him

to purfue his own inclinations, without molest ation or complaint.

But this calm did not hold long. As foon as her new dignity lost the charms of novelty, nature awoke, as from a dream, and convinced her, that something more than empty show was necessary to human happiness: but, alas! this conviction came too late; and all her expossus lations were as inessectual to induce the tenderness or esteem of her husband, as those of her

friends had been with her, to prevent her marrying him. On the contrary, they turned his
indifference into aversion, and made him treat

• her

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA. 235

her with indignity and contempt, infulting her deformity, and ridiculing the vanity that had prompted her to facrifice her fortune for a bare

title.
Hard as such treatment was to be submitted
to, she had no redress, but was obliged to bear
it in silence, without even the poor consolation
of compassion to mitigate her sufferings. At
length a further aggravation of her wrongs gave
her the pleasure of revenge, by driving him again
into the distresses from which her folly had re-

lieved him. ' In the pursuit of pleasure, to which he had facrificed his character and fortune, he never had even the excuse of a refined taste, or par-' ticular passion, to palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example of his companions, or was a flave to every gross impulse of his own caprice, without the least notion of delicacy, or even decency, to direct him. As he was frolling alone about his house, one unhappy evening, when he had no company to divert his thoughts, he happened, just as it grew dark, to overhear two persons, a male and female, in earnest conversation. Curiosity prompting him to liften, he foon discovered, that love was the subject of their discourse, in which the man, whom, by his voice, he knew to be one of his huntiman's helpers, was fo successful, that he persuaded the fair-one to promise him ' a meeting, half an hour after, in the dogkennel.

'Though the place of affignation might have deterred any person, whose senses, as well as his inclinations, were not totally debauched, from

from attempting to supplant the happy lover, the novelty of such an adventure made his lord-ship overlook that, and resolve to supply his dog-boy's place. Accordingly, he retired unperceived, and going to the stables, ordered him to be called, and sent him directly on a message some miles off, without giving him an opportunity of letting his mistress know any thing of the matter.

As foon as the time appointed drew near, his lordship went to the agreeable scene, where the punctual fair one did not let him wait long. As he was about the dog-boy's size, and the place was quite dark, she never perceived the change put upon her, but lavished her caresses upon him with the greatest tenderness, vowing never more to have any correspondence with the pantry-boy or scullion, who, it seems were the dog-boy's formidable rivals, but to be always constant to him alone; and took her leave of him, with a promise to meet him there at the same time, next evening.

fair should have been, the oddity of it, with the pleasure of supplanting another, even so mean a person, and in so unworthy an object, made him determine to be punctual to her appointment. But then the difficulty was, how to prevent his rival's traversing his design, for his delicacy was not in the least alarmed at the thought of his participating in her favours. He was also at a loss to know who the obliging female might be, for the darkness that concealed him was equally savourable to her, and he was a stranger to her voice; nor did he care

to alk any questions, as that would betray his

own

own imposture, and bring on an explanation that he did not desire, both as his greatest pleafure was in the cheat, and the discovery might be attended with circumstances he should choose to avoid, in case the semale was disagreeable to him.

To obviate all these inconveniencies, he ordered his rival to attend him the moment he returned, when he gave him a letter to carry that instant to a gentleman who lived about twenty
miles off, with directions to be back early the
next day with an answer. This he said aloud,
in the hearing of all his servants, that, if his
mistress should happen to hear ofher lover's being sent from home, she might also have reason
to expect his return time enough to keep the appointment; but, to prevent this, he had desired
the person to whom he wrote, to keep the messenger, as if for an answer of the letter, two or
three days; in which time he concluded he himself should be tired of his amour.

C H A P. XV.

indicated 4 confidence by the confidence and the confidence of the

Continued: His lordship's scheme to sling his rival unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occasions strange discoveries. Woman never at a loss. Law often spoils sport.

PLEASED with the fagacity of this scheme he waited for the next evening, with an impatience that he did not often feel on such occasions;

occasions; but an unlucky accident disappointed his designs. The gentleman to whom he wrote the letter happened not to be at home, nor was expected for a day or two; wherefore, as his lord had ordered him to make haste back, he left

the letter, and returned without any delay, per haps not more in obedience to his orders, than

from his impatience to retrieve the disappointment his desires had met, by his absence, the

evening before.

As foon as he alighted, therefore, his first care was to find out his mistress, to tell her the reason of his disappointing her the evening before, and to make a new assignation for that; but what was their mutual surprise when they came to compare notes! As he insisted on his not having attended the appointment, she flew into a rage, and accused him of having betrayed her basely to some of his companions; and, as she positively afferted her having met some person there, he accused her, with equal warmth, of inconstancy, and sacrificing him to some of his rivals, on whom he vowed the severest vengeance, if he should ever find him out.

As this altercation was not carried on with much delicacy on either fide, it foon produced an absolute rupture between the lovers, who separated with sentiments for each other very different from those with which they met. The dog-boy, in an hour or too, when his resentment cooled a little, recollected that it might be proper to let his lord know the success of his message, who sent for him into his presence directly; and being freed from his apprehensions, by hearing that he was but that

moment returned, ordered him to fet out again
inftantly, and deliver the letter to the gentleman, wherever he was, and not return without
an answer.

His orders were fo urgent that the fellow did not dare to make the least delay; but fortune, that seemed resolved to cross his lordship's designs, contrived it so, that he met the gentleman on his road, without having called at home, or received the letter that had been left for him. Upon the dog-boy's informing him of it, he concluded, as he was much nearer to his lordship's than to his own house, that it was the readiest way for him to wait upon him directly, without minding to send the man for the letter. Accordingly, he bade him turn back, and ride on before him, to acquaint his lordship of his coming.

fecond time, he made fuch haste, that he reached home just at the time of his lordship's appointment; when it unluckily coming into his head, that his perfidious mistress might possibly have taken the advantage of his absence, to make another assignation in his dog-kennel, the first thing he did, the moment he dismounted from his horse, was to go there, to see if any one had in-

vaded his territories.

Nor was his suspicion disappointed; for the fair-one was so uneasy to unravel the mystery of the adventure of the evening before, that she punctually attended her appointment, where she had not waited many minutes before her unknown lover arrived. The scene of their meeting was so dark, that it was impossible for either of them to know the other. However,

fhe foon thought of a method to remedy this,

which was, to purloin fomething out of his pockets, by which she might discover who he

was, without betraying herself; for she soon found, that he knew no more of her than she

did of him.

She had just executed her design, and was taking her leave of her lover, when his jea-

lous rival came upon them unawares, and, overhearing their expressions of fondness, was so

enraged, that he refolved to take immediate re-

venge: accordingly, he approached them with-

out any noise, and, turning the but-end of his whip, aimed a stroke so unluckily, though at a

venture, that it felled his lordship to the ground.

The female, who instantly guessed what was the matter, took advantage of the darkness to make

her escape, which she happily effected without

any difaster, the dog-boy stumbling over his

fallen adversary, the first step he advanced to

· pursue her.

· His lordship, half recovered from the blow,
· laid hold of his antagonist, who grappling with

him directly, a battle enfued, in which nobility

was fo rudely handled, that his lordship was bliged to declare himself, and cry out for quar-

ter. It is easy to conceive the confusion of the

conqueror upon this discovery; he instantly strove

to disengage himself, and make his escape;

but his lordship held him fast, promising to for-

e give him, though, if he would have the difcre-

tion never to mention a fyllable of the affair,
and inform him who the female was with whom

he had made the affignation to meet in this place

the evening before.

· Thefe

These conditions were too easy not to be immediately complied with. He accordingly swore ternal secres, and readily told his lordship that the girl was no other than the kitchen-maid's daughter, who served as a scullion-wench under her mother.

This discovery of his mistress's quality was almost as disagreeable to his lordship, as the effect of the dog-boy's jealousy. However, he smothered his vexation, and stealing secretly into the house, that he might not be seen in such a condition, retired to his own apartment by him-self, to change his clothes, and wash off the blood and dirt with which he was all over plentifully daubed.

As foon as he had fet himself somewhat to rights, he rang for his valet de chambre, who was his usual agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid's daughter up to him. The valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his mather's taste, was not in the least surprised at his choice of such an object, but obeyed him directly.

The fortunate female, who had found out the quality of her new lover by his fnuff-box, which she had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to obey the glad summons, for fear she might be suspected of having designedly occasioned the outrage his lordship had lately met; however, her ambition getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to be prevailed on, and went trembling and blushing, in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know his lordship's commands.

Vol. II. M

' If he had been furprifed at the discovery of her condition, he was much more agreeably fo at the fight of her; for, though the was far from being handsome, there was something in her face, which, with her extreme youth, and a glow of health that her confusion heightened onot a little, struck his fancy in an uncommon manner. He, therefore, without giving her the · least hint of what had happened, as he imagined he knew nothing of him, made no ceremony of proposing love to her. But, young as she was, the had too much woman in her foul to comply so easily, though there was nothing she defired more ardently. Accordingly, the refused · his lordship with the most respectful modesty; and, on urging his request further, threw herself at his feet in a flood of tears, and begged him to have compassion upon her friendless youth and innocence.

Such behaviour would have made him doubt the dog-boy's information, did not the found of her voice convince him she was the person. He, therefore, laughed at her artifice, and told her, that, as soon as the farce was ended, he should expect another answer, as he knew she had granted to others the favour he asked of her.

This convinced her that he had discovered her, and that it was necessary for her to enlarge her scheme, to accomplish the design she had formed, of establishing a lasting interest in his affections. Accordingly, upon his saying this, she embraced his knees in a seeming agony of distress, and, conjuring him to have mercy on her folly, owned that she had transfersely with one, and one only, who had made fuch

fuch an impression upon her heart, that though he had taken him for another, and knew not

even who he was, she had made a vow never to

repeat her folly with any other. 'The candour of this confession, the greatest part of which he thought he knew to be true, completed her conquest over him. He raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, discovered himself to her. The consequence is obvious. She immediately appeared in publick as his mistress, and had the address to accommodate herself so entirely to his caprices, that fhe foon gained the absolute mastery of his heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned off, of ' course, as an offense to her fight, though not ' without a confiderable gratuity, to purchase his ' filence; but that was impossible; the moment he left the house, he looked upon himself as freed from the necessity of concealing it any longer,

and made it the common subject of his discourse, till it became as publickly known as his lord-

fhip's name.

'This happened just as his affairs became again fo diffressed, that he was forced to withhold the support he had allowed his wife. She, therefore, directly took the advantage of it, to fue him for a separate maintenance, on the plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. fact was too flagrant to be denied; and his infatuation was fuch, that he would not re-" move the cause, to avoid the consequence of the fuit, but chose to quit his native country, and come here with his mistress, to live in the disesteem and contempt you see him treated with, on the poor pittance of his fortune, which the law allows him for his support; the rest, M 2 6 much much the greater part of it, being affigned for the maintenance of his wife, and payment of his

4 debts.'

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a GREAT man.

MY master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however disagreeable picture of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to fee an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the foul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrify, and mark the character of a man, in the lineaments of his vifage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance struck me with horrour; every vice that can deform the human foul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue, in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my mafter's principles, the intimacy of fuch a perfon blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and, embracing with the tenderness of long-parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions, almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adventures

tures they had met with, fince they had feen each other last.

In the account given by my master there were none but common occurrences; but the history of his friend had something so strikingly singular in it, that, for the curiosity of such a character, I'll give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringness of it would overpower human sight, and strike imagination with horrour too strong to bear.

'You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend (said the stranger to my master) to learn

the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or dif-

inclination to oblige you; but because I had not

arrived at any fixed period, to make a proper

pause at, and therefore an impersect account could give you but little satisfaction. But that

objection is now removed: I am here fettled in a

fituation, which, though far below my former

hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not

launch out any more into the fatigues and perils

of the world, at this late feafon of my life. One

caution only I must hint to you, which is, that

in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent every thing in

the unadorned simplicity of its first principles,

without any regard to the received notions of

felf-deluded man.

I was born in France, of poor parents, who were fearcely able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of la-

bour, I rashly entered into the monastick, before

M 3

· had experience enough to fee the folly of fuch aftep: but my flay here was not long: to a ' man of fense the obligation of a vow ceases, with the motive that induced him to take it. I " made my escape from the convent, and as I was ' destitute of money to support me, and as yet 6 too ignorant of the ways of the world, to be ' able to live without it, was driven by necessity to inlift myself for a soldier. But I foon found that I had not gained by the change, the flavery of a foldier's life, being still more intolerable than that of a monk. I therefore had recourse to my ' former expedient for relief, and deferted the very first opportunity. I then threw myself at random upon the world, without any particular ' point to direct my course to; but this did not discourage me: I had boldly thrown off the · shackles which foolish man had forged for himfelf, to prevent his rifing in life, and regulated my conduct folely by my convenience. This e gave me a superiority over the rest of mankind, which I never failed to avail myfelf of. I looked upon their follies as my inheritance, and foon found abundant opportunities of turning them to my advantage.

For some years I lived a life of ramble, in the course of which I met with many adventures.—At length, I thought my own country too narrow a sphere to confine my activity to, and so I went to Spain, where I expected an ample harvest from the ignorance and superstition of the people; but their poverty disappointed my hopes, and almost starved me into repentance of my expedition. However, I proceeded to Madrid, where the credulity of a countryman

countryman of my own made me amends for the referve of the natives. He not only relieved my immediate wants, which were too preffing to be bor'n, but also entrusted into my hands fome valuable materials for a literary work, from which he expected both reputation and profit, But I disappointed his hopes; for, being tired of Spain, I took the first opportunity of going to try my fortune in some other country, and carried all his papers with me. Nor was this all he suffered by his confidence. I had before experienced the inconvenience of depending upon charity, in a country where there is scarce sufficient for the necessities of nature. I, therefore, thought it proper to take all the money and valuable effects in his possession, to defray the expenses of my journey. As to the distress this might throw him into, I never regarded that a moment, no more than I did his being my countryman. I despised the narrowness of thought that made fuch accidental circumstances of any weight, when they clashed with my own particular defigns; and I esteemed the lesson I had ' taught him, to be more cautious whom he placed his confidence in, a sufficient recompense for his · loss.

From Spain, I directed my course to Germany, where the political knowledge I acquired from my late friend's papers, made me so much taken notice of, that after some time, not disagreeably spent among the great, I was recommended to the prime minister, and savourite of the king of Poland, as a proper person to be entrusted with the education of his only son. Not to disgrace this character, I assumed a sictitious name and title, and gave out, that I had M 4

been obliged to leave my own country for an faffair of honour. My employment gave me

frequent opportunities of conversing with the father of my pupil, in which I displayed my

skill in politicks to fuch advantage, that I soon
 was admitted into his esteem and confidence.

In this intercourse I had the honour of starting

the first hint of that project, which has fince

kindled the present war in Germany, and will

immortalise his name (for he has had the ungenerous meanness to assume it to himself) to

all ages.

Such a fituation was fufficient to fatisfy the defires of any other man; but my ambition

knew no bounds: I thought my patron did not

reward my merit as it deserved; and, in revenge,
I resolved to work his ruin. For this purpose,

· I entered into a correspondence with several no-

blemen, who were his enemies, and, taking ad-

• vantage of the opportunities his confidence gave

me of feeing his papers, copied fome, and coun terfeited others, that I thought necessary to my

terfeited others, that I thought necessary to my

design, which was no less than to raise a civil war, in which the minister should be facri-

ficed, and the master dethroned. But, just as

my plot was ripe for execution, it was disco-

• vered, and I hurried from a palace to a prison,

where I was condemned to languish out the rest

of my days; my life being spared in compliance

with a delicacy of my patron's, who thought it

would be a difgrace to him to have his fon's tu-

" tor hanged.

When I had lain here fome time, a happy thought procured me my liberty: I wrote a

most penitential letter to the pope's nuncio, in which I discovered my true name, and my hav-

's ing

ing fled from my vows; and pretending a thorough fense of my guilt, and desire of returning

to my order, begged his intercession in my fa-

vour. My scheme succeeded! He claimed me as an ecclesiastic, and the king, whose mind was

too intent on greater matters, to think of me,

readily complied. I was accordingly released from my prison, but instead of being set abso-

· lutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was fent under

a guard of ecclefiasticks to Rome, where all the

favour I could obtain, was to be ordered back

to my convent.

'This was a great disappointment to me; but
I was obliged to submit. I accordingly set out,
guarded as before, but determined to take the

first opportunity of making my escape; which I

at length affected, after many vain attempts. 'To frustrate the pursuit of my guards, I fled ' into Switzerland, where the name of liberty flattered my hopes of doing whatever I pleased. The first thing I did there, was to abjure my re-· ligion, and profess their's, to conciliate their good opinion. This was no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon all religions with equalindifference. As I had no money, I immediately commenced authour. But, though I gained reputation, my profits were so inconsiderable,. that I was obliged to have recourse to other methods for my support, some of which happening. to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged to e leave their dominions with circumstances of

leave their dominions with circumstances of disgrace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind, when I tell you, that the affair

they made so great a noise about, was only my denying a debt which I was unable to pay, and

' the creditor did not even want.

'There were fome other particulars, indeed, of ' my conduct, which would have met with a fevere fate, had I not taken prudent care to obviate it. I had entered into an intimacy with ' a person of some fortune, who had an agree. ' able wife. The connexions of the wife are ' always made with a view to fome particular end. I had more than one in this acquaintance: • the fupply of my necessities, by the generosity of the husband, and the gratification of my pleafure, by the enjoyment of the wife. - I fucceeded in both, but was prevented by an accident from enjoying my fuccess long. The husband surprised us one day in a situation that did onot admit of doubt. He drew his fword, to have revenged his wrongs with my death; but · I disappointed his design, by presenting a pistol at his head, which I always carried about me, ' for fear of accidents. Upon this, he ran out of the house in a kind of frenzy. I saw the delicacy of my fituation, and that my fafety depended upon the proper use of that moment. The wife ' had fwooned away at the first fight of her hufband. I ran and fetched a glass of water, as · if to recover her, but conveyed a few drops into it, which I never went without, for any fuch emergency, that delivered her for ever from all fear of her husband's resentment. I had many reasons for doing this. It was in her power to " make discoveries to her husband, which I did not choose; beside, as the suspicion of her death " would inevitably fall upon him, I thought that a good way to escape his revenge. I then quitted the house without being perceived. All things happened as I could wish. The husband was obliged to fly from his country, to avoid an ig-· nominious

- nominious death, for the murther of his wife; and all his effects were confiscated to the state.
- It is true, I did not entirely escape suspicion!
- He had laid open all he knew of the affair, by
- letter, to his friends! but, though they be-
- lieved him, he had no evidence to support his
- charge; fo that I despised his impotent accusa-
- f tions.
- · From Switzerland I once more turned my face
- to Germany, where my name was fo famous for my political knowledge, that, a war being just
- ready to break out, I received confiderable offers
- from most of the parties concerned, to engage
- " me in their fervice; but, though I refused none,
- · I resolved not to engage myselfabsolutely to any,
- till I could know which might prove most ad-
- vantageous to me.'

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to England, where his services are rejected by the state, and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with a halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.

S England was likely to bear a confiderable · A part in the war, I thought it proper to go over, and found the inclinations of the ministry there also. The riches and credulity of the in-· habitants of that country have long made it · be esteemed the inheritance of needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my abilities in fo fertile a foil inspired me with an ardour I had · never felt before. I already grasped all the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself as * the oracle of the people, and the terrour of the · ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence with a pension, that should enable me to fpend the rest of my days, wherever I liked, with dignity and eafe. · Full of these flattering hopes, I arrived in

London, where I foon found, that, just as the onotion I had formed of the people in general · might be, the government would not take the bait I had prepared for them, and treated me and my propofals with equal contempt. This

s threw me into the necessity of prostituting the abilities abilities, which I fondly hoped would have been

employed in embroiling nations, to the deception of individuals, for the support of life; for

all the wealth I was mafter of confifted folely in

the projects of my brain.

· My fuccess in this under-plot made me some amends for the miscarriage of the other. I no 6 sooner fixed my habitation, than I was crouded to by tradefmen of all kinds, to follicit my cuftom for things which I had not the least probability of being ever able to pay for. But that gave me no concern; I accepted their offers to fuch an amount, that I was immediately able to procure confiderable fums of money for other occasions, by the sale of commodities which, so far from having occasion for, I scarcely knew

the use of. Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all referve, and gave a loofe to every passion ' which luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm; never reflecting, that the day would foon come, when my inability to pay my present debts would not only put a stop to these artificial refources, but also probably plunge me in the horrours of a gaol for life. I professed ' myself a man of pleasure! I dressed, gamed, and intrigued with people of the first rank; and, for some time, was so intoxicated as to forget ' my purpose in coming over, and think I could fupport this life for ever. Not that I was ever · fo intent upon my pleasures as to miss any opportunity of procuring the means immediately necessary to obtain them. On the contrary, the moment I threw off my defigns supon the government, I doubled my applica' tion to turn the follies of particulars to my own

advantage, stopping at nothing, however iniquitous in the opinion of the world, to accomplish

my defigns.

Such a life must necessarily involve me in a variety of adventures, many of which, it is true, I got not so smoothly over as I could wish; but I had learned philosophy enough to

take the bad with the good, without repi-

drefs.

It would be endless to enter into a particular detail of every thing I did and suffered in the course of this life; I shall, therefore, only just mention one or two affairs, which may serve to

give you some notion of the rest.

As I particularly valued myself upon my literary character, there was no kind of acquaintance I was fonder of cultivating, than with men of letters; for which I had also a further motive, that, as their attention to books generally made them strangers to the ways of men, they were most easy to be made the property of any

· mercenary defigns.

On both these accounts I had taken lodgings in the house of a clergyman, who, besides
the character of a man of learning, was also
reputed to be in good circumstances. I soon
found that he was a person exactly sitted for
my designs, and therefore lost no time in making a proper impression on him. The sirst
step towards acquiring considence is to place it
yourself. I immediately made him my banker,
lodging every sum of money I won at play, or
raised by the means I mentioned before, in his
hands.

considerable at first, he conceived an opinion of my being a person of consequence and fortune above my appearance. This inspired him with such respect for me, that if at any time I even hinted an occasion for more than I had in his hands, he not only offered to supply me, but even looked upon my acceptance as an honour. To confirm him in this way of thinking, I frequently accepted of his offers when I had no occasion, only that the punctuality of my payment might make him still the readier whenever I should.

Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail myself of this scheme. A bad run at play stripped me of all my money, and my tradesmen brought in their bills, so that my former resources were at an end. In this difficulty I applied to my landlord, who readily supplied me with all the money in his possession; and, that not being sufficient, borrowed as much more as he could, till my remittances should arrive from

my estate.

This supply might have extricated me from the difficulties of the present moment. But I was awoke from my golden dreams, and saw that this was the last money I could any ways expect to raise, as my practices began to be suspected, and every body had taken the alarm against me; so that, if I parted with it, I should only gain a momentary relief, as my landlord would soon expect to be paid also. I, therefore, resolved to serve all my creditors alike, and go back to Germany with the money in my possession, leaving them to curse their

their credulity, and be more cautious for the future.

As I had still a confiderable quantity of valuable effects in my possession, I knew it would be impossible to remove them without giving the alarm to my landlord, and I could not think of leaving them in his hands, though they were far short of the debt I owed him. In this dilemma my ready genius prompted a scheme that would not only fecure me from him, but also give me time to prepare for my decampment with more convenience. Upon my first coming to his house, I had contrived, by taking the imopressions in wax, to get false keys to all his locks. 'This is a piece of precaution, which no man of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance of my fcheme, the morning after I received the money from him, and before I was to pay it away by appointment, I took the opportunity, while he was at church, to convey into his closet several things of value, my property in which I could clearly prove, taking away, at the fame time, the obligations which I had given him for the " money he had lent me, which his confidence in ' my honour had prevented his taking the precaution of having witnesses to.

As foon as I had done this, I went directly to a magistrate, before whom I made oath of my being robbed of a large sum of money and many of my most valuable effects, among which I particularly named the things I had lest in his closet, and required an authority to apprehend my landlord, and search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he had stolen them, having caught him often coming out of my apartments

in evident confusion, and at times when my being absent deprived him of every honest reason

of going into them; and this charge I had confirmed by the testimony of my valet de chambre,

and another person, whom I had prepared pro-

e perly.

'Though the execution of sentence is not quite so sudden in England as in Turkey, an accusation of this kind, however groundless, is, in many respects, not much less dreadful; the harpies of the law never losing their hold of the accused, till they have devoured every thing in The warrant I demanded was his possession. readily granted for this reason; and away I resolutely went, in company with the officers, to execute it. We found my landlord, in the fecurity of innocence, in his parlour, waiting for my coming in to dinner. It is impossible to express his astonishment, when they laid hold of him like a thief, and told him it was on my accusation. All the resolution and prefence of mind I was mafter of were requifite to bear me through the scene! At first he was unable to speak a word, which the candour of his accusers did not fail to construe into a silent acknowledgement of his guilt; but, recovering ' himself in a few moments, he first raised his eyes to heaven, and then turning them upon e me, gave me a look that almost froze the blood in my veins; but never deigned to speak a word to me.

'He then addressed himself to the officers, and mildly desired that they would execute their duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the sa-cred character he bore, till a proof of his guilt should

fhould make him appear unworthy of the fanction of it.

Such behaviour had an effect not to be described upon all that were present. The very officers forgot their hardened nature for a moment, and the tear of pity fell from eyes that never wept before at human misery. Even I began to feel the foolish infection, and was obliged to charm up other passions to prevent my betraying myself, though my ruin was at stake. Accordingly, I raifed my voice, and, with a ftern accent, commanded the officers to do their duty, and fearch the house, before his accomplices · should have time to convey away the things we came in quest of. This word put an end to a compassion that was contrary to their nature, and they proceeded to their business with their usual keenness; though still with respect, till they came to fearch his closet, where the fight of things, which I had fworn to have been stolen. from me, appeared so plain a proof of his guilt, that they treated him with all the indignity of the vilest malefactor.

• Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto pre• ferved a steadiness of temper that seemed supe• riour to the power of fortune; but at this sight
• his resolution failed him. He fell upon his knees,
• and raising his hands and eyes to heaven, Just
• God! (said he) thy will be done! Thou knowest
• my innocence, and art able to defend me!—
• And wilt defend me (said he, rising, and reco-

vering his former spirits.)

In the mean time, I seemed encouraged, by this success, to hope for the recovery of the money which I pretended to have lost also, and

and ceased not to urge the officers to make the frictest search. But this was not necessary; they ransacked every place, and tossed about every thing that was too large for them to convey away, till they made his whole house one scene of desolation. They then dragged him before the magistrate, where the finding of the things gave fuch weight to the charge which Iopolitively fwore against him, that he was on the verge of being hurried to prison, and would certainly have suffered an ignominious death, had it not been for some unlucky prevarication in ' my valet de chambre's evidence. This, with fome fuspicions that were suggested against my own character, by the pawnbroker to whom I had fold the goods I took up from my tradefmen, and who unfortunately happened to be opresent, gave the affair fuch a turn in his favour, that he was admitted to bail, till his innocence, or guilt, should be proved by a publick tryal. · But it was far from my intention to wait for this. The moment I left the magistrate, I went to the house of an acquaintance, whither I had ordered my effects to be removed before, where I resolved to prepare for my departure with the utmost expedition. As to my creditors, when they called upon me next morning, as I had appointed, for their money, I told them the story of my having been robbed the day before by my landlord, and therefore that they must wait till I should receive another remittance from my own country; and though I faw that few of them believed me, or were inclined to grant me that indulgence, I was under no concern, as the habitation of my friend

was in a place privileged from the immediate

power of the law.

· However, it was impossible to be easy in such a fituation, where every eye that faw me reproached me with what I had done! I, therefore. took the opportunity of going off, in which I was fo fuccessful as to elude the vigilance of my pursuers, and escape to Holland, where I ' had the vexation to learn that half of my scheme was disappointed, my landlord being discharged without tryal, for want of my appearing to profecute him. But, though he escaped death, his affairs were so effectually ruined by the loss of the money he lent and had procured for me, and the expense and damage he suffered by my accusation, that he was obliged to fly for refuge to the favages of America, from the power of his more favage creditors.

C H A P. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politicks, and suffers a second shipwreck in He that will not when he may, ENGLAND. -It is often better to play a poor game than stand out. CHRYSAL arrives at LISBON.

I No fooner arrived in Holland, the general I rendezvous of politicians, than I reassumed that character once more, and that with fuch · fuccefs, that the minister of a power in alliance 6 with with England conceived such an opinion of my

abilities, as made him offer to recommend me to

that court, for an employment of the highest

consequence in one of the principal courts of

Germany.

Though I was sensible that my return to England must be attended with disagreeable, if not dangerous circumstances, from the general prejudices that were entertained there against me, I boldly resolved to accept of his offer. The former, which could consist only in impotent marks of distike, I disregarded; and the latter I judged

of diffike, I difregarded; and the latter I judged my recommendation would enable me to defeat.

Accordingly I fet out with the utmost privacy,

and was fafe in London before my leaving Holland was even suspected by those who would

have lain in wait for me.

The very morning after my arrival I waited upon the minister to whom I was recommended, with my letters, who received me very politely, and, upon the credit of the character given to him of me, entered into a familiar conversation on several subjects of intricacy and importance, in which I supported the character he had received of me so well, that he dismissed me with an assurance of his protection and fa-

vour.

I now thought myself secure of my hopes:
but the pleasure of this thought was of a very
short continuance. The very next morning I
received a message from the minister to attend
him directly, which, you may think, I obeyed
in the highest spirits. Instead of the affability
with which I expected to be received, upon my
advancing to him, he darted a look at me, that
feemed

· feemed defigned to fearch my very foul. After viewing me steadily thus for some moments, ' You are recommended to me (faid he) as a e man of abilities, and fuch I have found you to be; but you have imposed upon the perfon who recommended you, and concealed ' your real character from him, or he would never have entertained fo favourable an opinion of fuch an abandoned wretch! --- But I have unravelled the mystery of your iniquities, and am guarded against your wiles. Your crimes call loud for vengeance, and the stroke of fate hangs over your head. But, in hopes you may repent and amend your life, and in respect to the recommendation you brought (of which I cannot give you a stronger testimony than this) I will give you an opportunity to escape, for this time, the ruin that threatens vou. Fly this country directly! If you are found in this city an hour hence, or make the · least delay in any part of the kingdom (and ' all your steps are watched) you are to expect no ' favour or protection. And, that you should not plead inability to obey this injunction, take this ' purse of gold, and let me never see your face " more."

I need not tell you the effect this speech had upon me. I took the purse, and retired, without making any reply; nor did I close my eyes in sleep, till I had bade adieu to that inhospitable shore.

'On my return, I went to wait upon my former patron, but was denied admission, and ordered never to go there any more; the account of my disgrace in *England* having, as I learned afterafterwards, been transmitted to him in the very

fhip that brought me over.

'Though these miscarriages mortified my pride, they did not deject my spirit. The gold given me by the English minister enabled me to support myfelf in a state of independence for fome time; during which, I successively offered to accept every proposal that I had formerly rejected; but I had missed my opportunity, and was now rejected myself in my turn. At length, when I was almost reduced to despair, the employment I hold here was offered to me, which, ' though far beneath my former hopes, I thought it not prudent to refuse, especially as it opened me an opportunity of venting my rage with ' impunity upon all who had ever offended me. 'I am literally hired to wage open war with truth, honour, and justice, by inventing false news, to support the exhausted spirits of the people; by defaming the enemies of my employers, to give a colour to the iniquitous defigns of the ' latter; and by varnishing over the most flagrant acts of oppression, cruelty, and deceit, with the ' specious colours of authority, justice, and re-· ligion.

To a man who retained any of the prejudices of the world, and did not examine things in the simplicity of nature, such a task must be most

disagreeable. But to me all things are indif-

ferent, as I know all things are alike.'

Here my master's friend concluded his history; the enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit, had it been related by any body but himself; though, as I told you before, I have omitted the blackest particulars, and softened the colours of the rest.

In a few days after this interview my master left Brussels, and proceeded on his journey to Liston; during the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth relating.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL comes, at LISBON, into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. CHRYSAL's master is at length taken up, and he changes his service.

IF I was formerly surprised at meeting a Peruvian acquaintance at Vienna, I was no less so, when I found that the person to whom he sent me in Liston, was the very captain, of whose miraculous conversation, after the rape and murther of his brother's wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be a man chosen for the great attempt; the proof of which he had given of his capacity in that affair having raised their opinion of him so high, as to make them think him the only proper person for this.

I did not remain long in a state of speculation in the possession of this master; the orders, which were brought along with me, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of the design. Accordingly, the blow was struck a few nights after; but, in the confusion inseparable from such attempts, without effect.

The

The king was shot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love assignation, at some distance from his palace, by my master, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuss, loaded with small balls, at him, through the back of the coach.

By an instantaneous stupesaction of sear, which is often taken for resolution, and presence of mind, the king sell down in the coach, and spoke not a word; which made my master conclude the work done, and so prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confusion the next morning, when he found that the king, though severely wounded, was likely to recover! The opportunity was lost, nor was it probable, that another should offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event, so far safe, that no one could endanger his safety by betraying him, there being no person there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for secrets of this importance are always entrusted to as sew as possible.

While he thus calmly looked on as an unconcerned spectator, it is impossible to describe the distraction that reigned all over the city, where every person suspected his neighbour, and was almost asraid to converse with his brother, for sear of being suspected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the person guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the most mysterious silence was observed, and all conversation
on the subject discouraged. This was thought
to be the most probable way of coming to the
knowledge of so dark an affair; as their spies
could thereby mix with the people with less sufpicion, and make their observations with the
Vol. II.

greater certainty, when they should be off their

guard.

Not that they were at a loss to think from whence the blow had come: but by whom it was firuck was the difficulty to find out, that so they might found their proceedings on an evidence of justice, for the Jesuits were too mighty a body to

be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reason for suspecting them of this fact was, that, upon the miscarriage of their premature attempt in America, the king was so incensed against the whole society, that he dismissed them from the direction of his conscience, and every other place and employment about his person and court.

Such an indignity he was fensible must alarm the resentment of a set of men not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts; he had, therefore, taken every precaution to guard against them, as far as human prudence could direct his sears, which was only against disturbances in the state, for of such an attempt as this he could not suspect them.

While things hung in this fuspence, I had an opportunity of seeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants

force to describe them.

I have already given you the genuine character of the Dutch; to that let us add poverty, pride, fuperstition, bigotry, and its inseparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you some idea of the present Portuguese. A people of whom it is hard to say, whether to abstracted speculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the struggle between their sollies and vices is so unremitted and so strong.

A little

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to ashes by lightening; and, before they had recovered from the consternation which such a missfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their American domi-

nions being swallowed by an earthquake.

Such fignal instances of the wrath of Heaven might have been expected to alarm their consciences to look for the causes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But, instead of that, the first proof they gave of coming to their reason (or, I should rather say, of coming to themselves, for reason it was not) after their fright, was, to attribute these missortunes to a relaxation in superstitious severity, and to demand, as victims to it, the only people, under heaven, whose good nature had given effectual relief to their diffress.

At length, after a calm so long, that people began to think the storm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burst, but also the

whole nation beside.

I told you, that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The person with whom he had been was descended from the first, and related or allied

to all the greatest families in his kingdom.

In a country, whose characteristics are pride and revenge, such an intercourse must be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all those samilies seemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly, a rumour of her being with child having extorted some inadvertent, illative, general menaces from some of her relations, as the sact was really so, the conscious apprehensions of the king N 2 were

were alarmed; and, as he could not declare the true-reason of them, he made a pretence of the assassination; the charge of which received some appearance of probability, from the very circumstance which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the at-

tempt was made upon him.

Thus, to the fear of danger arising from a real crime were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed, on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For, before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king, of seifing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the losses he had suffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected, they were publickly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations and strained inferences of those who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such scenes as these are too horrid to be dwelt on: I shall, therefore, return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair, the miscarriage of his attempt having made it unnecessary for him to disburse the money among which I came to him, and by that means continued me fo long in his posseffion.

Could any thing have heightened the opinion my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been to see him an unconcerned spectator of the fufferings of those unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the justice of their pu-

nishment.

But his triumph was not long; fecret and inscrutable as the Jesuits imagined they had laid their schemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, fuch information of them as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and juffice to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmost severity. A step that could not have been taken on such grounds, while these nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in spirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to strike at the root of ecclefiaftical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke, under which they had fo long blindly groaned, that, at length, they thought it just and natural.

Accordingly, in the midst of his security my master was seised, and hurried away to a prison, with the rest of his brethren; and all his papers and effects secured for the government. Of the former they could make but little use, as it is an invariable rule with all the order, never to keep any by them, whose discovery may endanger them, or their defigns; but the latter were turned to ready

account.

In this diffipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who, in his fearch, took an opportunity N 3

to secrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquisition with a banker, for fear of detection.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest AMI-NADAB. Adventures of his fon. He enters into business at Lisbon, in which Chrysal suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. CHRYSAL enters into a new Jervice.

I Was scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I saw a person enter his compting-house, the fight of whom made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was the surprise of my master less: "O! God of Abraham (said he) is not this the

- fon of my brother Aminadab? Where hast thou • been? And where is thy father? He has been
- fought from Dan to Beersheba! His spoiling that Gentile, that Egyptian woman, has been a joy
- to all the brethren! but I am amazed to fee thee

here: I hope he is fafe out of the reach of every

· Christian power.'

· O! brother of my father (replied the fon of Aminadab) mention not that unhappy affair,

if thou hast not a mind to kill thy wretched

nephew with grief. My father is dead!'--But where is the wealth, nephew (interrupted my master hastily) where is the wealth ?'--All lost! all buried with him in the bottom of the ocean!' (replied the nephew.) - All lost! The wealth all loft! O my brother! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother! Since the destruction of Ferusalem, there fell not such a misfortune on our tribe! the wealth all loft! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother !'- Alas, my father, I faint through weariness, weakness, and hunger; have not eaten bread this day; let us retire into the inner chamber, and when my foul is refreshed with a morfel of bread, and a drop of water, I will put ashes on my head, and ungird my loins, and then unfold the whole unhappy story to thee.

The repast was literally what he had asked; and, as foon as it was ended, and the young Aminadab and his uncle feated on the floor together, in the posture of mourning, the former proceeded thus:

By the letters which my father wrote to thee from England, in the facred cypher of our fa-" mily, thou wer't informed of his intended return ' into his native land of Africa, and invited to " meet him at Tetuan, and share in his fortune. This he told me while we were upon our voyage; but thy better angel prevented thee, and faved thee the labour and loss of such a journey in vain.

' The ship, on board which we unfortunately embarked, was a Dutchman, bound for the coast of Italy, but was to land us at Gibraltar, from whence we knew we could get an immediate ' passage over. But, behold, when we were just in view of the port; when the fight of his native land made the soul of my father rejoice, N 4

and we thought of nothing but fafety and content, a Sallee rover gave chase to our ship. The

· Dutch captain immediately crouded all the fail he ' could to escape; but, the wind dying away, and

the pirate gaining upon us with his oars, he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and told him

that we were all ruined, for he had neglected to

bring a pass.

'This news was like a clap of thunder to my father, who too well knew the consequence of their finding such a mass of wealth in his pos-' fession! 'Wretch that I am (exclaimed he) why did I venture with one of thy fordid nation? flaves to Mammon, who would hazard liberty and fortune to fave fuch a trifle.' Then turning about, and going into his cabbin, he flood some mo-' ments, as if lost in thought, when bursting into an extatick rage, he fnatched up the coffer, in which his gold and jewels were, from under the head of his bed, and embracing it eagerly, I have ' gained thee (faid he) I have earned thee with an-* xiety and toil; and I will not lose thee now! -· O Jonas, send thy whale to receive me, and bear * me to the land of my fathers. I will not be a s laughing-flock to the Gentiles, nor a by-word in my father's house.'- Saying which words he rushed upon the deck, and, before any person could oposibly prevent him, he plunged into the fea, with the coffer in his arms, and was never feen

4 more. While we stood amazed at his rashness, the heavens, as if appealed with the facrifice, im-" mediately fent a wind, that filled our fluttering fails, and foon bore the ship, delivered thus of

its Jonas, out of the reach of the enemies. You may better conceive than I can describe

6 the

1-

he

ne

nd

10

n

to

of

es

0

n

the fituation I was in at this event: I prostrated myself on the shore, when we landed at Gibraltar, and bewailed my missfortune with tears and lamentations. But this afforded no relief to my distress, and something I must do to earn a morsel of bread. I, therefore, fold all my superfluous raiment for sour ducats, for all our money was in the coffer, and with these did I purchase some eggs and fruits, which I sold again in the garrison, to support my life, till I should have an opportunity of coming to thee, my father, for advice and assistance in this distress; and now behold these four ducats are become twelve ducats in my hands, and that is all my worldly wealth.

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained filent some time. At length he spoke to his nephew in these words: 'It is in vain, O fon of my brother, to mourn for what is not to be remedied; holy David wept no longer for his child after he was dead: let us, therefore arise and think of something that may, if not retrieve thy mighty lofs, at least adminifter relief to thy diffress. Thou hast been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening the weight, without defacing the image, on the golden coins of these idolaters. This was the first rise of thy father, who began the world as poor as thou art now, till his unwearied industry in this practice raised him from want. Follow thou, therefore, his example; and may the God of thy fathers give thee the same success, but with an happier bleffing than he found.

And lo! fortunately it has happened, that I have this very hour received a large quantity of

N 5

the coin of Britain, all new from the mint.

On that, therefore, thou mayest begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of this labour shall be thine: I was just going to

have fent for another, who always works for me, for a fifth; but I am willing to give thee a

profit extraordinary, to encourage thee.

'Thine earnings in this business will soon produce thee a considerable sum, with which thou mayest go privately to London, and purchase old clothes, which will bring great profit in Germany, as soon as this war shall be at an end.

Till thou art able to provide for thyself, thou mayest eat bread here, and sleep under the shadow of my roof: be not dejected; honest indu-

ftry never fails of success.

The young Aminadab was no fooner introduced thus into a way of honest industry, than he seemed to forget his loss, and settled himself most intently to work. I fell one of the first sacrifices to his arts, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; so that from a thousand of us who were in the bag, his share of the spoil was a treasure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, stocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets that could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of imposition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleasure; but, alas, vain boast, it was now no more! I came from this fiery tryal with all the marks of age and infirmity so strong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing my-felf and my companions to a number of British

foldiers,

foldiers, just come from Soup Maigre and straw, in a French prison.—In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be sent to England, against whom this trade was mostly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the disgrace of such diminishing. But, before I could be sent off, an accident happened in the samily of my master, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in Liston.

I have told you that in secret he was a Jew, though the prospect of gain made him profess Christianity, in despite of the horrours of the Inquisition. But, happy had it been for him that he had not made such profession, or that his nephew

had been drowned with his father.

For no fooner had his gains, in his art of diminishing, restored him a little to his spirits, than thinking his portion of that profit too little, and insufficient besides to raise him to opulence so suddenly as he desired, he cast about how to acquire the whole, or at least a large part of his uncle's

wealth, at once.

He, therefore, took a proper place to work in, for his merchandise did not interrupt him in his main business, at some distance from his uncle's house; and, having conveyed a large sum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the holy office of his uncle's fudaism, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding, that when he should be seised, there would be no enquiry made after the money that was in his own hands, as he knew it was impossible he should ever escape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance, in comparison of the sums which he knew would be forseited, yet he comforted.

forted himself with the thought that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and justly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the Inquisition took possession of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in his hands, they went directly in quest of it, and that so unexpectedly, that they caught him at his work, beyond a possibility of evasion or escape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any state. He was, therefore, immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not less cruel than that of his uncle from the Inqui-

fition.

Of all the human sufferings I had yet seen, except in the case of the facrifices, this gave me the greatest pleasure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my service of course, and entered into that of the holy office, to the judge of which I was delivered the day I was taken out of the possession of the unfortunate Jew.——I have before given you my sentiments on the absurdity of thinking to please the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the instance of the human passover of the Jews. The same arguments will hold here; and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if possible, more absurd under the Christian dispensation than any other, as, beside the general laws of nature and reason, the particular laws of Christianity do every-where clearly and expressly command brotherly love, tenderness, and compassion, forbidding every appear-

of wrath. But there has been so much, and that so well faid, on this subject already; and the nature of the fufferings of those unhappy wretches who are brought before this tribunal is fo well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared fingularly affecting to me.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. history of PHERON and ILISSA.

HE next day after I came into the possession of the inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of a most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire. He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was diffinguished from the national look of the Portuguese, by an uncommon turn of feature, which showed him of another people.

As foon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquifitor, with an aweful folemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus: 'Thou art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confess thy guilt.'-- I told thee before, O judge of the faith

faith of Christians! (replied the prisoner, with · a composed look and determined voice) I told • thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am ont conscious of any thing that should incur the censure of this tribunal: nor shall all the tortures which the inventive cruelty of man can inflict upon this wretched body make me lie against mine immortal foul, or aeknowledge guilt to which I am a stranger. But tell me of what I am accused, and my conscience shall direct my lips to answer thee the truth. Perhaps · I may unwittingly have erred; thou knowest that I have not always professed the Christian faith, according to the laws established here: pardon, then, the errors of mine ignorance, and instruct me to avoid the like for the future. And, O! I adjure thee, by thy Christian faith, to relieve my heart from the anxiety that tears it, for the fate of my daughter! O! let me know'-

His adjuration was broken off at these words by the officers of the court; and, his answer not being fatisfactory, he was remanded back to prison, without any further questions, with the strongest menaces of feverity; though, in fecret, the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderness and refpect, and supplied with every comfort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrours of a prison.

My master then withdrew, and, changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and iplendid drefs, retired to his own apartments, where, after the respectful ceremony of sending to defire admission, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderness of love. I have 6 feen

feen thy father, my dearest Hissa (said he) and he is well; nor shall any human means be want-

ing to preferve him fo.'

Why, then, may I not fee him? (replied the lady.) How can I trust thy words, who hast al-ready deceived me?'— Thou knowest, my love (returned he) that thy request is imposfible; and if I have deceived thee, by promising compliance with it, it was only to calm the transports of thy passion, that in a cooler moment thou mightest hearken to the voice of love and happiness.'- Mention not happiness to me in this place! Can happiness be without liberty? Is a prison the proper scene for love? But I will be deceived no longer! I will see my father, or I will not live. Grant me this request, and expett my gratitude. Thou knowest that for myself I fear not thy power! Thou knowest that immediate death is ever in my reach. Trifle not, therefore, with " me any longer; restore me to my father; restore us both to liberty; and then, then only, speak to me of love.'- Thou haft conquered, my Iliffa, thou hast conquered! Your father shall be refored to you; and we will all fly together to thy ative land, where we shall live in happiness: but this cannot be compassed on a sudden; it will require both time and address to secure our retreat. But when I have done this for my Ilissa; can I be sure of her love? Will her heart return the facrifice I make?'- I have told thee that my heart is grateful; I tell thee now it is not insensible to softer passions. Urge me no further. When I am freed from this prison, and my father is present to give the sanction of his authority to my actions, I promise thee to become thy

wife. - And my inclination, which has never syet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to

pay the love I promise at the altar.'

These words raised my master's heart into an extafy; he proftrated himself at her feet, he kissed

her hand, and fwore eternal love.

The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes for their escape, and planning scenes of future happiness; in the prospect of which, their unequal years feemed to raife no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen: her beauty, though very great, was rather majestick than soft; different from the Bohemian lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an aweful distance, and the slash of her eye, like lightening, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian, but still in all the vigour of his life, and far from difagreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There was fomething fo extraordinary in this affair, that it raised my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of his heart that evening, my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of galfantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a

return.

The lady refused not his request, but, at giving it, defired that he would be careful of it, as the esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it

having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her fay this, and faw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiofity would be gratified by the spirit of the golden case. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and, fummonfummoning, by our fympathetick impulse, the spirit I wanted, I showed him my curiosity, which he complied with, by a look which signified these words:—'There is something so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons who have raised your curiosity, that it will be necessary to trace it from the beginning, to give you the satisfaction you desire.

The father of the young lady, who gave me to our master, is the person whom you saw this morning at his tribunal. His name, in his own country, was *Pheron*; he is a native of *Abyssinia*, where his ancestors have possessed ample territories for many ages, being descended from the

race of their kings.

From the first dawn of reason in the mind of Pheron, he showed the strongest defire for ' knowledge, and the steadiest attachment to vir-The advances of human knowledge have onot been fo great in those countries as here; yet atural reason has been able to discover the sub-Iime truths of morality, the practice of which is called wisdom, and the time consumed here in fruitless speculation devoted to it; by which " means, if men are not fo knowing, they are certainly more wife. In this happy em-' ployment passed the first years of the youth of ' Pheron, till, riper manhood calling him to the fervice of his country, he went, at the head of his father's vassals, to repel the invasions of the · Ethiopians.

'His fuccess was so great in this first essay of his arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but also carried the war into their own country, where, after many victories, he compelled them

to fue for peace.

The fame of his actions foon reached the ear of his fovereign, who sent for him to his court, and rewarded his services, by giving him his fister in marriage. Dignities, in those countries, are not prostituted to the support of luxury and idleness. Pheron returned home with his bride, to govern and protect his people, who, safe in his care, pursued their usual occupations; war not being there made a constant profession, nor the gratification of the worst passions of human nature reduced into a science, and practised by rule.

'The peace which Pheron had made was not injurious to his enemies, and therefore was preferved by them, which gave him leifure to attend to the improvement of his country, and

instruction of his people.

He had lived in this happy state some years, when there arrived a person in his country, who gave an unexpected turn to his affairs. The situation of those nations is such, that the inhabitants themselves rarely ever travel; nor is the face of a stranger seen in an age among them. This made the arrival of this man the more taken notice of; he was immediately introduced to Pheron, to whose friendship his knowledge in several branches of science soon recommended him.

When the stranger had thus established an interest with him, he at length disclosed to him the motive of his coming into a country so remote from his own; he told him that he had undertaken this hazardous and painful journey in pure obedience to the divine command of instructing the ignorant in the knowledge of salvation. He explained to him the mysteries

of the Christian religion; the hierarchy of Rome; the divine foundation of its power; and the feveral orders in its government, in fo for-' cible a manner, that he foon made a convert of

· Pheron had always adored the name of Christ, but never till now knew what it was to be a Chri-' stian. One only book of his Gospel had he ever feen, and from that he could understand no more, than that faith in the death of Christ for the redemption of mankind, in obedience to the self-evident laws of morality, with the pious wor-Ship of the one God alone, was the whole religion taught by him.—It is not strange, there-' fore, if the glorious fabrick of the church, as represented by this Jesuit, for such he was, had ' all the effect he could defire upon him, the naturally inquisitive turn of his mind making him ' listen with eagerness to every thing which seemed to open a new prospect to it. --- Nor was he content with his own knowing these sublime doctrines; he also instructed his wife, whom he tenderly loved, and their example converted the greatest part of his people; for nothing ' could prevail upon him to attempt forcing their affent. -But this did not fatisfy him; the ' descriptions which he had heard of the learning, piety, and glory of Rome, had filled his foul with an ardent defire to see that metropolis of ' the world, that he might learn its virtues, and transplant them into his own country. He com-" municated this thought to his instructor, who, ' fired with the glory of fuch a profelyte, encouraged him in it by every argument he could ' use. This determined his resolution to make an attempt, the hazards of which would be re-« warded

warded with fuch happy confequences. He, therefore, prepared all things for his journey, in which his wife would bear him company, and also bring her only child, the lady whom you saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his Holiness; and, committing the government of his people to his brother, and taking jewels and gold to an immense value, to defray the expenses of his journey, he set out with a company sufficient to protect him from the dangers of travelling through such inhospitable countries, and arrived without any accident at the Red Sea, where he embarked on board a ship for Alexandria.

While he waited here for a ship bound to Italy, the plague deprived him of his instructor and his wife. He was at first inconsolable for his loss; but virtue soon awoke reason to his guard, and his care for his daughter made him careful of himself.—His attendants would have persuaded him to return directly home, as he had lost his guide; but the loss of his wife made the thought of home a torture to him. He, therefore, sent them back, and resolved to settle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the monastick life himself at Rome.

With this design he embarked in the first ship that sailed for Europe, not being able to bear the sight of a place which had been so said tal to him. The ship was bound to this place, but, for a large sum of money, the commander engaged to land him at Leghorn; but, happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth on the passage, he brought him directly hither, where he was no sooner landed, than he informed the inquisitor, who is his brother, who immediately feised

- feised both Pheron and his daughter, for errors
- in their opinions, and confined them in the pri-
- fons of the holy office, where they have now been
- above a year.
- The first motive of this outrage was the
- franger's wealth, an unpardonable crime in that
- court, and which would foon have brought them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the
- daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, and,
- by what you have overheard to-day, may pro-
- bably prevent it entirely.'

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, and obtains his consent. He employs an English sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.

THE inquisitor's heart was too full of love to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of Ilissa.

He found him wrapped in so prosound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a fight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superiour to such terrours.

Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of *Pheron*; and, in the illusion of imagination, gination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! My con'fcience is fecure, and I despise your tortures.'—
As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when, seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him, in his surprise, to be continued; and he proceeded thus:
'I have told thee, that thy tortures should not

6

6

fo

re

w

re

D

ha

bu

fo

an

bend my foul to falfehood, and now thou shalt find it fo.' O father of Ilissa! (returned my master, melted into tenderness at such a sight) I come 4 not to give thee torture! I bring the balm of comfort to thy foul!'- Art thou not the inquifitor?'- I am, O Pheron! and thy friend.'-· Am I awake? Is this, or was the former, but a dream? Guard me, good Heaven! Let me not fall ' from virtue!'—' Such virtue ever is the care of Heaven! Pheron, behold thy friend! the pro-' selvte of thy virtues. The time admits not ' many words; I come to offer thee liberty, and concert with thee the methods for our obtaining happiness. Thy Ilissa' — Heaven guard my child!'—— Thy Ilissa is well, and happy in her father's welfare!'—'O my child! my child! But shall I ever see her again?" You shall; fhe shall be restored to your bosom, and never ' torn from it more.' --- Good gracious judge! · O! when? O! how? - My child! my child! -Suppress your joy a moment; the beauties of Ilissa have triumphed over the malice of her fate! She has found a lover, who offers happiness ' to her and you.'—' Does my child love him? Is he an honest man?'—' His life will prove him fuch! He offers to restore you and your Ilissa to liberty, and to accompany you both to your native country, for there can be no fafety in Europe 6 for

for you, after you leave this place; your escape

from whence, and every circumstance relating to your return, shall be his care. Nor will he de-

' mand the reward his heart pants for, till your

' safety shall remove every fear, every doubt of his

· fincerity.'

oname the generous man!'——'Behold him at your feet! Receive me for your fon.'——

Thee! the inquisitor! who threatened me with torture!' -- But treated thee with tenderness.

' treated Ilissa with respect.' -- ' Make me know

that!'——'I alk no favour but on that con-

dition. If I procure liberty for you and your lissa; if I restore you to your native land, and

accompany you thither; if your Ilissa acknow-

ledges the fervices of my love, and afks your

consent to reward them, will you confirm my bliss, and own me for your son?

will, and thank kind Heaven that gave me fuch a

· fon.

Saying this, he embraced my master, who, in a few words, let him know the scheme he had formed for their escape, and then left him to his happy

reflexions while he went to profecute it.

In one of the cells of the Inquisition there was confined an English seaman, who had been seised and secretly conveyed thither for some disrespectful expressions against the divinity of Saint Dominick.

The manly, modest resolution with which he had resused to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmness under the first tortures, marked him out to the inquisitor as the person proper for his design; for he would not trust any one of his own country, not even his bro-

ther,

ther, whose treachery to Pheron he now ab-

As foon as he opened the door of his cell, the failor, whose foreness prevented his sleeping very found, perceived him, and, imagining it was a fummons to a repetition of the torture, he fprang up as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, · Hallo, who comes there?' - The inquisitor, advancing, answered, ' A friend.' -- ' Aye! damn all fuch friends (replied the failor.) I suppose you come to give me another toasting; but if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd fend you off with a falt eel for your supper.'-· Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I come to fet you free, if you defire, and will deferve it.' - 'Avast hailing, brother! I do not " understand you!' --- " Why, do not you desire to be free?' --- " Desire! Aye, that I do! But I may whistle for that wind long enough before it will blow.'—— Perhaps not; perhaps that wind, as you fay, is nearer blowing than ' you imagine. What would you do to be free?' Do! I'd burn the inquisition, and cut the inquifitor's throat! I'd do any thing but turn Pa-

' pist, or fight against Old England.' -- ' Honest ' Briton! But, suppose I should set you free, ' would you serve me faithfully in one thing,

that is neither against your country nor your religion?'—— Belay that, and I'll warrant you, if I say it, I'll do it, without more words.

'I am no landsman, nor Portuguese.'——'Well,
then, I'll take your word; and so come with
me.'——The sailor was so surprised, he
scarce knew whether he was asseep or awake;
however, as soon as the inquisitor had unlocked
his

his chains, he shrugged his shoulders, and followed

him, without more questions.

When they were come into my master's apartment, he made the failor fit down, and giving him fome wine to chear his spirits, 'You are now at ' liberty, my friend (faid he) without any further condition, and may go where you please: but, if you will ferve me in an affair I shall mention to you, you shall have reason to think of this night with pleasure as long as you live.'— Serve you, master! (replied the failor) that I will! name but what you would have me do; ' that is, as I said before-you understand meand I'll do it, though it was to hand the maintop-gallant fail, in a storm, at midnight, when the yard was broke in the flings, and it was not ' my watch; for if it was a man's watch, do you ' fee, it would be but his duty; and there is no " merit in a man's doing his duty-I am no flincher. Inever fay aye when I mean no: though I fay it, I am a gentleman; my father was a lieutenant of a man of war, and I have been at sea these ' five and thirty years man and boy, and never was once brought to the gang-way in all that time. If the noble captain that rated me a mid-' shipman twenty years ago, had lived to be an ad-' miral, I should have been an officer before now.' The honest openness of heart that appeared in

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the sailor's giving his own character made my master hear him with pleasure, and place an entire considence in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook to go to London, buy a good ship, and freight her for Alexandria, and to call at Liston in his way, and to take my master and his friends Vol. II.

on board; to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in London, and account with the inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus fettled, the failor was just departing, when, on a sudden thought, he turned short on the inquisitor: 'Steady (said he) fleady; fo far go right before the wind, s and all's well. But whom do you mean to clap aboard me when I come? If it is the · Pretender, or the French king, here take back ' your trinkums; I'll be damned before I'll help either of them to make his escape.'-· Never fear, my friend,' (replied the inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter at the strangeness of such a thought) 'I promise you it is neither of these; I promise you not to do any thing against your king or your religion.'-· But shall we not have one dash at this dam-• ned place? (added the failor.) Shall we not fet it on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat? · I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulf of hell, to have a stroke at Devil Dominick; shall not we see the inquisition on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat.'-- We will confider about those things: but you had better lose no time; and let me once more caution you not to be feen in Liston at prefent, and to be as expeditious as possible in your ' return.'-- ' Never fear, master; never fear,' replied the failor, and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here



I here quitted the fervice of the inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the failor.

CHAP. XXIII.

The failor goes to London, buys a ship, and returns to Lisbon, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a French ship. He lands his passengers at Alexandria, returns home, and marries. Chrysal quits his service.

MY new master no sooner found himself at liberty, than he hasted away to the sea-side, without ever stopping to look behind him, and, luckily finding the packet just ready to sail, he

was out of fight of Liston before morning.

Never was an heart so intent upon executing a commission faithfully as his; he thought of nothing else all the passage, and the moment he arrived in London he sold the jewels, bought a ship, manned her well, and, having laid in a proper cargo, set sail for Lisbon, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in London.

I had been an idle spectator of these transactions, for young Aminadab had made such depredations on me, that no one in London would accept me at my original value; and my master's honour would not think of parting with me for less, without acquainting the person from whom he had received me.—The moment he arrived

U 2

in Liston, he gave notice to his friend, whose joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expressed. He immediately had the treasures, which he defigned to take with him, conveyed secretly on board, and, as soon as the wind served, embarked himself with his friends in the night, and obliged my master to sail directly, though greatly to his distaits faction, because he would not consent to his firing the prison of the inquisition, and cutting the inquisitor's throat.

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking, fending a fair wind, which soon carried us out of

the fear of our enemies.

It is impossible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt festivity of my master add a little to the pleasure of the voyage, which met but one cloud, that feemed at first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my mafler entered the cabbin hastily one morning, and, with a kind of sterce delight slashing in his eyes, says to the inquisitor, whom he always called owner,

Well, owner, you shall now see what English boys can do; there is a large Frenchman bearing

down upon us, but, if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he had got foul of a lee shore, I

will never take the helm again, if he is not even

obliged to drop anchor to bring him up along

fide of us; and, as I expected some such thing,
I took a letter of marque, so that you need not

fear being hanged for a pirate, if the worft

fhould happen.'

But, delighted as my master was, his passengers did not seem so well pleased with the news, especially especially his owner, who was not used to fighting, and beside was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleasure

which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all went directly, therefore, upon the deck and, feeing the ship really coming toward them, the inquisitor went into the cabbin, that he should not be observed by the men, and, sending for my master, accosted him thus: 'Surely, my friend, vou cannot mean to wait for that ship, (for we were lying-to) ' she certainly means to attack you.' - And fo let her, owner, (replied my mafter) 'I'll warrant she gets as good as she brings.' --- But, confider, my friend;' (returned the inquisitor) 'consider we are on board you.' - Well, owner, and what then; you are onot afraid: the lady may be stowed safe below; and you'll stand as good a chance as another; you " are not afraid.' --- My good friend, I have not time now to explain my reasons to ' you; but if you have any regard for me, you will instantly crowd all the fail you can, and get clear of this affair-I defire it-I beg it.' - Why, look you, owner, what needs all thefe words? If so be you order us, we must put about, to be sure, for the ship is your's; but then the bonour of Old England, consider that; the ho-" nour of Old England." O, my friend, I can confider nothing but my defire to avoid ' this danger; fo once more I beg'--- Enough ' faid, enough faid.' Then going upon the deck, Well my lads, our owner does not choose this brush, while the lady is on board; so we must about ship: but, as we come back, Soup-maigre ' shall pay for it '--- And, faying this, he obeyed the defire of his owner as faithfully as if it had 03

been his own, only not with the same appearance of pleasure, not being able to avoid ejaculating damn fear, at every turn of the tune he whistled as he welked the deek the rest of that day

he walked the deck the rest of that day.

He had so punctually observed his owner's instructions in getting a good ship, that we were soon out of sight of the Frenchman; nor did we meet with any thing disagreeable during the re-

mainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good-humour, my mafter addressed his owner thus: -- Now, owner, while the fky is clear, and we have nothing elfe to do, I had better give you an account of your moe ney. Here is the log-book, which you may overhaul at your leifure, though the fooner the better. This is the time; there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as may hap-• pen by and by; you'll find all as fair as a new cable: but I must give you one point to direct your reckoning by, and that is this; you bade " me buy a ship and freight her, and so forth, and the and the cargo shall be my own, after I had done your job this trip. Now, owner, it is very true that a less vessel than this might have made the run; but then you feemed for desirous to be safe, that I thought it best to take a bargain in this stout ship, which I knew to be as good a fea-boat as ever turned to windward, and able to go, hank for hank, with any thing that swims the sea, as we showed when we run the Frenchman out of fight yesterday, though it went against my heart to do it; but no matter for that now; the ship is vour's, and you have a right to be obeyed. · However, there is the account, and here is the · reft 5

rest of your money, of which I did not lay out a shilling that I could avoid, but one guinea, which I gave Will Crosstree, to repair his riging, and one I gave Black Moll of Wapping, to heave down; and I could not well avoid those neither, for Will was an old mess-mate, and I owed Moll for many a good turn in her way. But all this signifies nothing to you; they can be stopped in the account; and here is a damned guinea too, that would not go; I believe it

has been in the hospital till it was fluxed off its

· legs.

And now, owner, as you may think this fhip cost too much, and that the cargo is too good, I will not keep you to your bargain; fhe is your own, and all that is in her, only pay the men; as for me, I am fatisfied with having got out of that damned inquisition, and e leave the rest to yourself. If you think that I have deferved any thing, well and good; if onot, I do not fear bread while the fea flows found Old England; all that grieves me is, that ' you would not let us fet fire to the inquisition, and cut the inquisitor's throat.'—If my master's bluntness, in the affair of the French ship, gave offense to his owner, the honesty of this speech reflored him to his warmest esteem; and made Pheron, who was present, cry out in a rapture, 'Thank Heaven, there is still some honesty among 'mankind.'--- Honesty, aye (replied my ' master) a little among the tars of Old England! a little.

The inquisitor having, by this time, recovered from the astonishment into which such nobleness of soul threw him, returned the account unopened,

unopened, with these words, I am convinced vour account must be just; and I freely make vou a gift, not of this ship and cargo, for they are justly your own already, but of the rest of the money which is in your hands.'-What, all, owner! all!'--- All, my friend; if it were many times fo much, you justly merit it.'-- But then, owner, had you not better fign the account, if you please, for fear of after-reckonings with your executors; for I hate the law damn-· ably, ever fince I lost a year's pay for hindering our boatswain's mate's brother to beat his wife. The brimstone swore I beat her husband, and so I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's fault that set her on. Damn all lawyers, say I.'-Well, then, my honest, worthy friend, there is a receipt; and I wish you success equal to vour merit; and you cannot have more.'--· Enough said, owner, enough said: I thank you; I thank you.'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at Alexandria, from whence they soon set out for Pheron's country, and, at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which, he assured them, were not better than bumboats, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a Thames water-man.

Having finished this his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that, as soon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at Gosport, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to speak to till now, readily consented to marry him.

him. One thing, though, I must not omit, and that was, that he kept a constant look-out all the voyage home, for that Frenchman whom he had sled from so fore against his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush for the honour of Old England.

I did not remain with him to be a witness of his happiness; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine sleeve buttons, to present to his mistress

the morning before his marriage.

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL arrives in London, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.

HE diminution of my fize, which had made my late master careless about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent scruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my present value, for me.

I did not remain long in his possession: he passed me off as soon as he arrived in London, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a division of the loss, in the purchase of old clothes, which he was going to carry abroad.——Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces, which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place

of fecurity, by their respective owners: but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold mysterious trade,

unnecessary to you.

This misfortune of my fize kept me a prisoner here till Saturday night, when my master always puts off his light coin, just before he shuts his shop, to the poor people, whose necessity requiring an immediate supply, for the support of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and fo must even bear the loss .-- Such a person did he think you, and accordingly gave me to you: but the moment I came into your possession, and found that you were the chosen of ten thousand, the firstborn of science, whom wisdom had instructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your pursuit, had been obliged to consent to a revelation of her most accult wisdom, and to entrust you with the command of that chain which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment, I fay, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the intelligence appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greatest pleasure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I should confer this completion of human happiness and honour upon you; a pleasure that was heightened by the noble constancy you showed, when the smell of the hot ox-cheeks, as you came by the cook's shop, raised that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you should purchase some of it to satisfy your hunger, or preserve me for this last experiment, in which the latter was fo gloriously triumphant. The

The auspicious moment is arrived; nature labours in the throws of the mystick birth; and lo! the philosophick king arises in all the glory of the morning! Attend to my words; receive the confummation of human knowledge.

10	apprehend	this	lecret caule,	you	muit
know	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	Adama * Asia	*	*
*	****	*	* 850	*	*
*	*	*	MILITARY MILE	*	*
*	*	*	*-	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*

O doleful and deplorable event! never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears. Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek fet in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raifed in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid steam .- The spirit started at the unpardonable offense to his purity; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation, and abhorrence, vanished from my fight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear; I funk under its weight, and fwooned away upon the floor *, where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burthen under fuch a disappointment. The labour of my life being loft, the one moment in a thousand

years

^{*} See the Preface.

years flipped away in vain. But fuch is the confequence of human weakness; such the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

CONCLUSION.

And new, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether thou art a tailor, whose principal debtor is made a lord—a physician, whose nostrum is discovered-a cobler, who fleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure-a poet, whose play is refused-or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine estate to purchase a seat in parliament, just before its dissolution, attend to the instruction of my words, and learn from my example. Seise the present moment, nor depend upon the future; let reason curb expectation; reduce imagination to common fense; and bring your wishes within the bounds of your real wants: fo shall Industry banish necessity from your habitation, and Content turn all your polressions into gold.

4 NO 50

END OF VOL. II.